Stability and Arithmetic

Lin WENG

Dedicated to the memory of my father Jiahua WENG
21 September 1933 – 12 April 2009

Abstract

Stability plays a central role in arithmetic. In this article, we explain some basic ideas and present certain constructions for our studies. There are two aspects: namely, general Class Field Theories for Riemann surfaces using semi-stable parabolic bundles and for p-adic number fields using what we call semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules; and non-abelian zeta functions for function fields over finite fields using semi-stable bundles and for number fields using semi-stable lattices.

CONTENTS

Introduction 7
Part A. Guidances from Geometry
Chapter I. Micro Reciprocity Law in Geometry 13
§1 Narasimhan-Seshadri Correspondence 13
1.1 Uniformization 13
1.2 Narasimhan-Seshadri Correspondence 13
§2 Micro Reciprocity Law 14
2.1 Weil’s Program 14
2.2 Micro Reciprocity Law 15
Chapter II. CFTs in Geometry 17
§3 Arithmetic CFT: Class Field Theory 17
§4 Geometric CFT: Conformal Field Theory 17
Part B. High Rank Zeta Functions and Stability

Chapter III. High Rank Zeta Functions

§5 Function Fields
  5.1 Definition and Basic Properties
  5.2 Global High Rank Zetas via Euler Products

§6 Number Fields
  6.1 Stability of $\mathcal{O}_F$-Lattices
  6.2 Geo-Arithmetical Cohomology
  6.3 High Rank Zetas

Chapter IV. Geometric Characterization of Stability

§7 Upper Half Space Model
  7.1 Upper Half Plane
  7.2 Upper Half Space
  7.3 Rank Two $\mathcal{O}_F$-Lattices: Upper Half Space Model

§8 Cusps
  8.1 Definition
  8.2 Cusp and Ideal Class Correspondence
  8.3 Stabilizer Groups of Cusps
  8.4 Fundamental Domain for $\Gamma_\infty$ on $\mathcal{H}^r \times \mathbb{H}^2$

§9 Fundamental Domain
  9.1 Siegel Type Distance
  9.2 Fundamental Domain

§10 Stability in Rank Two
  10.1 Stability and Distances to Cusps
  10.2 Moduli Space of Rank 1 Semi-Stable $\mathcal{O}_F$-Lattices

Chapter V. Algebraic Characterization of Stability

§11 Canonical Filtrations
  11.1 Canonical Filtrations
  11.2 Examples of Lattices

§12 Algebraic Characterization
  12.1 A GIT Principle
  12.2 Micro-Global Relation for Geo-Ari Truncation
Chapter VI. Analytic Characterization of Stability  
§13 Arthur’s Analytic Truncation  
  13.1 Parabolic Subgroups  
  13.2 Logarithmic Map  
  13.3 Roots, Coroots, Weights and Coweights  
  13.4 Positive Cone and Positive Chamber  
  13.5 Partial Truncation and First Estimations  
§14 Reduction Theory  
  14.1 Langlands’ Combinatorial Lemma  
  14.2 Langlands-Arthur’s Partition: Reduction Theory  
§15 Arthur’s Analytic Truncation  
  15.1 Definition  
  15.2 Basic Properties  
  15.3 Truncation $\Lambda^T$  
§16 Analytic Characterization of Stability  
  16.1 A Micro Bridge  
  16.2 Analytic Truncations and Stability  

Chapter VII. Non-Abelian $L$-Functions  
§17 High Rank Zetas and Eisenstein Series  
  17.1 Epstein Zeta Functions and High Rank Zetas  
  17.2 Rankin-Selberg Method: An Example with $SL_2$  
§18 Non-Abelian $L$-Functions  
  18.1 Automorphic Forms and Eisenstein Series  
  18.2 Non-Abelian $L$-Functions  
§19 Basic Properties of Non-Abelian $L$-Functions  
  19.1 Meromorphic Extension and Functional Equations  
  19.2 Holomorphicity and Singularities  

Chapter VIII. Symmetries and the Riemann Hypothesis  
§20 Abelian Parts of High Rank Zetas  
  20.1 Analytic Studies of High Rank Zetas  
  20.2 Advanced Rankin-Selberg and Zagier Methods  
  20.3 Discovery of Maximal Parabolics: $SL$, $Sp$ and $G_2$  
§21 Abelian Zetas for $(G, P)$  
  21.1 Definition  
  21.2 Conjectural FE and the RH  
§22 Abelian Parts of High Rank Zetas
Part C. General CFT and Stability

Chapter IX. $l$-adic Representations for $p$-adic Fields 59

§23 Finite Monodromy and Nilpotency 59
  23.1 Absolute Galois Group and Its pro-$l$ Structures 59
  23.2 Finite Monodromy 60
  23.3 Unipotency 60

Chapter X. Primary Theory of $p$-adic Representations 62

§24 Preliminary Structures of Absolute Galois Groups 62
  24.1 Galois Theory: A $p$-adic Consideration 62
  24.2 Arithmetic Structure: Cyclotomic Character 62
  24.3 Geometric Structure: Fields of Norms 62

§25 Galois Representations: Characteristic $p$-theory 64
  25.1 $\mathbb{F}_p$-Representations 64
  25.2 Étale $\varphi$-modules 65
  25.3 Characteristic $p$ Representation and Étale $\varphi$-Module 65

§26 Lifting to Characteristic Zero 66
  26.1 Witt Vectors and Teichmüller Lift 66
  26.2 $p$-adic Representations of Fields of Characteristic 0 67
  26.3 $p$-adic Representations and Étale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-Modules 68

Chapter XI. $p$-adic Hodge and Properties of Periods 69

§27 Hodge Theory over $\mathbb{C}$ 69

§28 Admissible Galois Representations 70

§29 Basic Properties of Various Periods 70
  29.1 Hodge-Tate Periods 70
  29.2 de Rham Periods 71
  29.3 Crystalline Periods 71
  29.4 Semi-Stable Periods 72

§30 Hodge-Tate, de Rham, Semi-Stable and Crystalline Reps 73
  30.1 Definition 73
  30.2 Basic Structures of $\mathbb{D}_\phi(V)$ 73
  30.3 Relations among Various $p$-adic Representations 74
  30.4 Examples 75

§31 $p$-adic Hodge Theory 76
Chapter XII. Fontaine’s Rings of Periods 78

§32 The Ring of de Rham Periods $\mathbb{B}_{dR}$ 78
§33 The Ring of Crystalline Periods $\mathbb{B}_{crys}$ 80
§34 The Ring of Semi-Stable Periods $\mathbb{B}_{st}$ 81

Chapter XIII. Micro Reciprocity Laws and General CFT 82

§35 Filtered $(\varphi, N)$-Modules and Semi-Stable Representations 82
  35.1 Definition 82
  35.2 Weak Admissibility and Semi-Stability 84
§36 Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Galois Representations 85
§37 Semi-Stability of Filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-Modules 85
  37.1 Weak Admissibility = Stability and of Slope Zero 85
  37.2 Ramifications 86
  37.3 $\omega$-Structures 87
  37.4 Semi-Stability of Filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-Modules 88
§38 General CFT for $p$-adic Number Fields 88
  38.1 Conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law 88
  38.2 General CFT for $p$-adic Number Fields 89

Chapter XIV. GIT Stability, Moduli and Invariants 90

§39 Moduli Spaces 90
§40 Polarizations and Galois Cohomology 91
§41 Iwasawa Cohomology and Dual Exp Map 92
  41.1 Galois Cohomology 92
  41.2 $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-Modules and Galois Cohomology 93
  41.3 Iwasawa Cohomology $H^i_{tw}(K, V)$ 93
  41.4 Two Descriptions of $H^i_{tw}(K, V)$ 93
  41.5 Dual Exponential Maps 95

Chapter XV. Two Approaches to Conjectural MRL 96

§42 Algebraic and Geometric Methods 96
§43 MRL with Limited Ramifications 96
  43.1 Logarithmic Map 97
  43.2 Basic Structures of $\mathbb{B}_{crys}^{\varphi=1}$ 97
  43.3 Rank One Structures 98
§44 Filtration of Invariant Lattices 99
Introduction

In the past a decade or so, importance of stability, which originally appeared and has played key roles in algebraic geometry, was gradually recognized by many people working in arithmetic. As typical examples, we now have

(i) Existence theorem and reciprocity law of a non-abelian class field theory for function fields over complex numbers, based on Seshadri’s work of semi-stable parabolic bundles over Riemann surfaces;

(ii) High rank zeta functions for global fields, defined as natural integrations over moduli spaces of semi-stable bundles/lattices; and

(iii) Characterization of the so-called semi-stable representations for absolute Galois groups of $p$-adic number fields, in terms of weakly admissible filtered $(\varphi, N)$-modules, or better, semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N)$-modules of slope zero.

Along with this line, as an integrated part of our Program on Geometric Arithmetic, in this article, we explain some basic ideas and present certain constructions using stability to study two non-abelian aspects of arithmetic, one at a micro level and the other on large scale.

I) Micro Level

We, at this micro level, want to give a characterization for each individual Galois representation. For this, first we, according to the associated base field and coefficients, classify Galois representations into four types, namely, $v$-adic/adelic representations for local/global (number) fields. As such, then our aim becomes to expose some totally independent structures from which the original Galois representations can be reconstructed.

In general, arbitrary Galois representations are too complicated to have clearer structures, certain natural restrictions should be imposed. In this direction, we, as a natural continuation of existing theories of Galois representations, choose to make the following rather standard restrictions:

| Fields\Coeffs | $v$-Adic | Adelic          |
|---------------|----------|-----------------|
| Local         | Fin Monodromy & Nilpotency | Compatible System |
| Global        | + Finite Ramification          | + Admissible System |

To be more precise, they are:

(i) $v$-adic Galois Representations for

(i.a) Local Field $K_w$: Here Galois representations $\rho_{w,v} : G_{K_w} \rightarrow GL_n(F_v)$ involved are for the absolute Galois group $G_{K_w}$ of a local $w$-adic number field $K_w$ with coefficients in a fixed $v$-adic number field $F_v$. Motivated by

(a) Grothendieck’s Monodromy Theorem for $v$-adic Galois representations of $w$-adic number fields, where $v \parallel w$, i.e., $v$ and $w$ are with different residual characteristics; and
(β) Fontaine’s Monodromy Theorem for $v$-adic Galois representations of $w$-adic number fields, with $v|w$, i.e., $v$ and $w$ are with the same residual characteristics, we assume that

(${\mathbf{pST}}$) $\rho_{w,v}$ is potentially semi-stable.

Clearly, when $v \nmid w$, this is equivalent to the following

(${\mathbf{pFM&U}}$) $\rho_{w,v}$ is potentially of finite monodromy and unipotent.

In other words, we assume that there exists a finite Galois extension $L_w/K_w$ such that for the induced Galois representation $\rho_{w,v} : G_{L_w} \to GL_n(F_v)$, the image of the associated ramification group $I_{L_w}$ is both finite and nilpotent.

(i.b) Global Field $K$: Here Galois representations $\rho_{K,v} : G_K \to GL_n(F_v)$ involved are for the absolute Galois group $G_K$ of a global number field $K$ with coefficients in a fixed $v$-adic number field $F_v$. Motivated by etale cohomology theory of algebraic varieties, we assume that

(${\mathbf{pST}}$) For all local completions $K_w$, the associated local $v$-adic representations $\rho_{w,v} : G_{K_w} \to GL_n(F_v)$ satisfies condition ${\mathbf{pST}}$ of (i.a); and

(${\mathbf{Unr}}$) For almost all $w$, the associated $v$-adic representations $\rho_{w,v} : G_{K_w} \to GL_n(F_v)$ are unramified.

(ii) Adelic Galois Representations for

(ii.a) Local Field $K_w$: Here Galois representations $\rho_{w,A_F} : G_{K_w} \to GL_n(A_F)$ involved are for the absolute Galois group $G_{K_w}$ of a $w$-adic number field $K_w$ with coefficients in the adelic space $A_F$ associated to a number field $F$. Continuity of $\rho_{w,A_F}$ proves to be too loose. Stronger algebraic condition should be imposed. Motivated by Grothendieck’s etale cohomology theory of algebraic varieties, and Deligne’s solution to the Weil conjecture when $v \nmid w$, together with Katz-Messing’s modification when $v|w$, we assume that

(${\mathbf{Unr}}$) For almost all $v$ (in coefficients), the associated $v$-adic representation $\rho_{w,v} : G_{K_w} \to GL_n(F_v)$ are unramified; and

(${\mathbf{Inv}}$) For all $v$, i.e., for $v$ satisfying either $v|w$ or $v \nmid w$, the associated characteristic polynomials of the Frobenius induced from $\rho_{w,v}$ are the same, particularly, independent of $v$.

We call such a representation a thick one, as the invariants do not depend on the coefficients chosen.

Remark. The compatibility conditions stated here are standard. (See e.g., [Se2], [Hi], [Tay].) However, from our point of view, the Inv condition appears to be to practical – yes, it is very convenient and extremely useful to impose the independence for the associated characteristic polynomials of Frobenius; on the other hand, this independence should not be the cause but rather an ultimate goal. In other words, it would be much better if the Inv condition can be replaced by other principles, e.g., certain compatibility from class field theory. (See e.g., [Kh1,2,3].) We leave the details to the reader.

(ii.b) Global Field $K$: Here Galois representations $\rho_{K,A_F} : G_K \to GL_n(A_F)$ involved are for the absolute Galois group $G_K$ of a global number field $K$ with coefficients in the adelic space $A_F$ associated to a number field $F$. As above, only continuity of $\rho_{w,A_F}$
appears to be too weak to get a good theory. Much stronger algebraic conditions should be imposed. Certainly, there are two different directions to be considered, namely, the horizontal one consisting of places $w$ of $K$, and the vertical one consisting of places $v$ of coefficients field $F$. From ii.a), we assume that

(Comp) For every fixed place $w$ of $K$, the induced representation $\rho_{w, A_F} : G_K \to GL_n(A_F)$ forms a compatible system.

As such, the corresponding theory is a thick one. Hence, by Inv, we are able to select good representatives for $\rho_{w, A_F}$, e.g., the induced $\rho_{w, v} : G_K \to GL_n(F_v)$ where $v \parallel w$. In this language, we then further assume that the admissible conditions for the other direction $v$ can be read from these selected $\rho_{w, v}$, $v \parallel w$. More precisely, we assume that

(dR) All $\rho_{w, v}$, $v \parallel w$, are of de Rham type;

(Crys) For almost all $w$ and $v$, $\rho_{v, w}$ are crystalline.

For this reason, we may form what we call the anleric ring

$$B_A := \prod' (B_{dR}, B_{crys})$$

where $B_{dR}$ denotes the ring of de Rham periods, and $B_{crys}$ the ring of crystalline periods, and $\prod'$ means the restricted product. As such, the final global condition we assume is the following:

(Adm) $\{\rho_{w, v}\}_{v \parallel w}$ are $B_A$-admissible.

Even this admissibility is not clearly stated due to ‘the lack of space’, which will be discussed in details elsewhere, one may sense it say via determinant formalism from abelian CFT, (see e.g., the reformulation by Serre for rank one case ([Se2]) and the conjecture of Fontaine-Mazur on geometric representations ([FM], see also [Tay]). For the obvious reason, we will call such a representation a thin one.

With the restrictions on Galois representations stated, let us next turn our attention to their characterizations. Here by a characterization, we mean a certain totally independent but intrinsic structure from which the original Galois representation can be reconstructed. There are two different approaches, analytic one and algebraic one.

- **Analytic One** Here the objects seeking are supposed to be equipped with analytic structures such as connections and residues (at least for $v$-adic representations). Good examples are the related works of Weil on flat bundles, of Seshadri on logarithmic unitary flat bundles, and of Dwork on $p$-adic differential equations;

- **Algebraic One** Here the structures involved are supposed to be purely algebraic. Good examples are Mumford’s semi-stable bundles, Seshadri’s parabolic bundles, Fontaine’s various rings of periods, and semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules. We will leave the details to the main text. Instead, let me point out that for local theories, when $l \neq p$, we should equally have $l$-adic analogues $\mathbb{B}_{\text{total}}$, $\mathbb{B}_{\text{FMN}}$, $\mathbb{B}_{\text{ur}}$ of Fontaine’s $p$-adic ring of de Rham, semi-stable, crystalline periods, namely, $\mathbb{B}_{dR}$, $\mathbb{B}_{st}$, $\mathbb{B}_{crys}$, respectively. Practically, this is possible due to the following reasons.

- **Hodge-Tate Filtration**: Since every $l$-adic representation, $l \neq p$, is geometric. Hence, it can be realized in terms of etale cohomology over which by the comparison theorem there is a natural Hodge-Tate filtration structure;

- **Monodromy Operator**: This is a direct consequence of Grothendieck’s Monodromy Theorem for $l$-adic Galois Representations;
• **Frobenius**, or equivalently, **Dieudonné Filtration**: This should be put into the context that Weil’s conjecture works in both $l$-adic and $p$-adic settings mentioned above;

• **Ramifications**, or equivalently, **$\omega$-structures**: This may be read from the so-called theory of breaks and conductors for $l$-adic Galois representations. For details see e.g., the main text and Chapter 1 of [Ka2].

To uniform the notation, denote the corresponding rings of periods in both $l$-adic theory and $p$-adic theory by $B_{dR}$, $B_{st}$, $B^+_{ur}$. Accordingly, for adelic representations of local fields, we then can formulate a huge adelic ring $B_A := \prod \left\{ B_{dR}, B_{st}^+ \right\}$, of adelic periods, namely, the restricted product of $B_{dR}$ with respect to $B_{st}^+$. In this language, the algebraic condition for thin adelic Galois representations of global fields along with the vertical direction may also be stated as:

(Adm) It is $B_A$-admissible.

## II) Large Scale

A characterization of each individual Galois representation in terms of pure algebraic structures may be called a Micro Reciprocity Law, MRL for short, as it exposes an intrinsic connection between Galois representations and certain algebraic aspects of the base fields. Assuming such a MRL, we then are in a position to understand the mathematics involved in a global way. There are also two different approaches, at least when the coefficients are local. Namely, the categorical theoretic one, based on the fact that Galois representations selected automatically form a Tannakian category, and the moduli theoretic one, based on the fact that the associated algebraic structures admit GIT stability interpretations. (In the case when the coefficients are global adelic spaces, the existing standard Tannakian category theory and GIT should be extended. Indeed, as pointed out by Hida, it is already an interesting problem to see whether our restricted adelic Galois representations form a Tannakian category: After all, the forgetful functor now is not to the category of finite vector spaces over local fields but to that of adelic spaces.)

• **Tannakian Categories** The main aim here is to offer a general Class Field Theory, CFT for short, for the associated base field. Roughly speaking, this goes as follows, at least when the coefficients are local fields. With the Micro Reciprocity Law, we then can get a clone Tannakian category, consisting of certain intrinsically defined pure algebraic objects associated to the base fields, for the Tannakian category consisting of selected Galois representations. As a direct consequence of the finite monodromy and nilpotence, using the so-called finitely generated sub-Tannakian categories and automorphism groups of the associated restrictions of the fiber functors, one then can establish an existence theorem and a global reciprocity law for all finite (non-abelian) extensions of the base fields so as to obtain a general CFT for them. As one may expect here, much refined results can be obtained. Indeed, via a certain truncation process, not only the associated Galois groups but the whole system of high ramification groups can be reproduced. For details, see Part C.

• **Moduli Spaces** From the MRL, Galois representations selected can be characterized by intrinsically defined algebraic structures associated to based fields. These algebraic
structures are further expected to be able to put together to form well-controlled moduli spaces. Accordingly, we have certain geometric objects to work with. The importance of such geometric spaces can hardly be overestimated since, with such spaces, we can introduce intrinsic (non-abelian) invariants for the base fields. Good examples are high rank zeta functions and their associated abelian parts. For details, see Part B.

To achieve this, we clearly need to have a good control of objects selected. As usual, this is quite delicate: If the selection is too restrictive, then there might not be enough information involved; on the other hand, it should not be too loose, as otherwise, it is too complicated to see structures in a neat manner, even we know many things are definitely there. (The reader can sense this from our current studies of the Langlands Program.) It is for the purpose of overcoming such difficulties that we introduce the following

**Key to the Success: Stability**

This is supposed to be a condition which helps us to make good selections and hence to get nice portions among all possibilities. Particularly, for the algebraic objects selected, we then expect to establish a general MRL (using them) so that the Tannakian category formalism can be applied and a general CFT can be established; and to construct moduli spaces (for them) so that intrinsic invariants can be introduced naturally. This condition is Stability. In accordance with what said above, as a general principle of selection, the condition of stability then should be

(a) algebraic, (b) intrinsic, and (c) rigid,

so that, with it, we can

(i) have a nice characterization of Galois representations in terms of semi-stable algebraic structures;
(ii) form a Tannakian category for these semi-stable objects; and hence
(iii) construct natural moduli spaces.

Good examples are for (parabolic) bundles, filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules, etc. For details, please see Parts A, B, and C in the main text.

This paper consists of three parts. In Part A, we indicate how a general non-abelian CFT for Riemann surfaces can be established using Tannakian category theory based on Seshadri’s work on semi-stable parabolic bundles. This serves as a general guidance for our discussions in later parts. In Part B, we, motivated by yet another CFT, the conformal field theory, for Riemann surfaces, discussed in Part A, make an intensive study on non-abelian invariants, namely, the high rank zetas for global fields defined using stability. Along with the course, we give a geometric characterization for rank two semi-stable lattices using generalized Siegel type distances between moduli points and cusps, an analytic characterization of stability using Arthur’s truncation, and a definition of general non-abelian $L$-functions using Langlands’ theory of Eisenstein series and spectral decompositions. In addition, we also briefly recall abelian zetas associated to $(G, P)$, with $G$ reductive groups and $P$ their maximal parabolic groups, which may be viewed as abelian parts of our non-abelian zetas. These abelian parts, naturally related with constant terms of Eisenstein series are expected to help us to understand the hidden role played by symmetry in the Riemann Hypothesis. Finally, in
Part C, we outline a program aiming at establishing a general CFT for $p$-adic number fields. Key points are the notion of semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules of slope zero and a conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law claiming that there is a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence between de Rham representations and semi-stable modules of slope zero. Key ingredients of Fontaine’s theory of $p$-adic Galois representations are recalled as well.

Acknowledgements: I would like to thank Deninger and Hida for their keen interests and huge supports during the long periods of preparations of this paper: our visits to Münster in Sept-Oct 2004,6,8 were very crucial to the studies of zetas explained in Part B; and a series personal notes on General CFT written at UCLA in March-April, 2007,8,9 is essential to Part C. Special thanks also due to anonymous referees for their careful readings and detailed suggestions. This work is partially supported by JSPS.
Chapter I. Micro Reciprocity Law in Geometry

1 Narasimhan-Seshadri Correspondence

1.1 Uniformization

Let $M$ be a compact Riemann surface of genus $g$ and $M' \hookrightarrow M$ a punctured Riemann surface with $M\setminus M' := \{P_1, P_2, \ldots, P_N\}$. Assume that $2g - 2 + N > 0$ so that by uniformization theorem there exists a Fuchsian group of first type $\Gamma \subset \text{PSL}(2, \mathbb{R})$ and the associated universal covering map

$$ (\pi' : \hat{\mathbb{H}} \to \mathbb{H} \cong M') \hookrightarrow (\pi : \hat{\mathbb{H}}^+ \to \mathbb{H}^+ \cong M) $$

where $\hat{\mathbb{H}}$ denotes the usual upper half plane and $\mathbb{H}^+$ denotes the extended upper half plane, namely, $\hat{\mathbb{H}}$ together with cusps associated to $(M', M)$, or better, to $\Gamma$.

1.2 (Narasimhan-)Seshadri Correspondence

Let $\rho : \pi_1(M', *) \to \text{GL}(V)$ be a unitary representation of the fundamental group $\pi_1(M', +) (\cong \Gamma)$ of $M'$. For simplicity, assume that it is irreducible. Then we know that $\rho$ satisfies the finite monodromy property at all $P_i$'s. This then implies that there exists a finite Galois covering

$$ \pi' : M' \to M $$

of compact Riemann surfaces ramified possibly at $P_i$'s such that $\rho$ naturally induces a unitary representation

$$ \rho' : \pi_1(M', *) \to \text{GL}(V) $$

of the fundamental group of the compact Riemann surface $M'$ on $V$. As such, by the uniformization theorem, we obtain a unitary flat bundle over $M'$ equipped with a natural action of the Galois group $\text{Gal}(\pi')$, namely, the four-tuple

$$ \left( M', E_{\rho'} := (\pi_1(M', *), \rho')((\hat{\mathbb{H}}^+ \times V), \nabla_{\rho'}; \text{Gal}(\pi')) \right). $$

One checks that the $\text{Gal}(\pi')$-invariants of the direct image of the differentials of $M'$ with coefficients in $E_{\rho'}$ coincides with the logarithmic differentials on $(M, Z)$ with coefficients in $E_{\rho}$, namely,

$$ \left( \pi'_*(E_{\rho'} \otimes \Omega^1_{M'}) \right)^{\text{Gal}(\pi')} = E_{\rho} \otimes \Omega^1_M(\log Z) $$

where $Z = P_1 + P_2 + \cdots + P_N$ denotes the reduced branch divisor on $M$. Consequently, we then obtain a logarithmic unitary flat bundle $(E_{\rho}, \nabla_{\rho}(\log Z))$ on the compact Riemann surface $M$. Thus by using $\text{Res}_{P_i} \nabla_{\rho}(\log Z)$, that is, by taking residues of logarithmic unitary connection $\nabla_{\rho}(\log Z)$ at $P_i$'s, we then obtain Seshadri’s parabolic structures on
the fibers of $E_p$, which is nothing but the quotient bundle $(\pi_1(M,\ast),\rho)((\mathbb{S}^1 \times V)$, at punctures $P_i$’s. As such, an important discovery of Seshadri is that the parabolic bundle obtained then is stable of degree zero. More strikingly, the converse is correct as well. Namely, any stable parabolic bundle of degree zero can be constructed in this manner.

2 Micro Reciprocity Law

2.1 Weil’s Program

This result of Seshadri, obtained with the help of Metha ([MS]), is in fact motivated by an earlier fundamental work of Narasimhan-Seshadri ([NS]), which claims that there is a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence between irreducible unitary representations of fundamental group $\pi_1(M,\ast)$ of compact Riemann surface $M$ and stable bundles of degree zero on $M$. In this sense, Seshadri’s result on parabolic bundles above is a generalization of Narasimhan-Seshadri’s work from compact Riemann surfaces to punctured Riemann surfaces, in which vector bundles are replaced by parabolic bundles.

In (algebraic) geometry, Narasimhan-Seshadri’s work then leads to a natural moduli space for irreducible unitary representations for fundamental groups of compact Riemann surfaces via Mumford’s Geometric Invariant Theory, GIT for short. Indeed, by Narasimhan-Seshadri’s result, it suffices to consider that for stable bundles of degree zero. While being stable and of degree zero for vector bundle are conditions in terms of intersection theory, it can be shown that this condition is equivalent to a certain GIT-stability. As such, via GIT quotient technique of Mumford ([M]), we can naturally realize the moduli space of stable bundles of degree zero on a compact Riemann surfaces as a quasi-projective variety. Moreover, following GIT, a natural compactification can be made by adding the so-called semi-stable points, which in terms of bundles means (Seshadri classes of) semi-stable vector bundles of degree zero. As Seshadri class corresponding naturally to equivalence class of unitary representations of fundamental group of the compact Riemann surface in question (modulo unipotency, or better after taking semi-simplification), this then gives also an algebraic construction for moduli spaces of these representations of fundamental groups.

However, moduli spaces of semi-stable bundles of degree zero over compact Riemann surfaces in general are singular. It was once a central problem to resolve these singularities in a natural manner. In terms of what was happened, there were in fact two different approaches, one of which due to Seshadri. It is this work of Seshadri that leads to the notion of parabolic bundles.

Before the notion of parabolic bundles, Seshadri also studied the so-called $\pi$-bundles ([S2]), a notion introduced by Grothendieck ([G]). In particular, Seshadri’s main discovery may be stated as that there is a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence between the so-called $\pi$-bundles and bundles with parabolic structures (say, when $\pi$ is a finite ramified covering). For more details, see e.g., Biswas related work on orbifold bundles and parabolic bundles ([Bis]).

Despite their huge successes in (algebraic) geometry, these fundamental works on stability have not made any serious impact in arithmetic (see however Nori’s basic
work ([Nor]) on fundamental groups via Tannakian category, even in which stability plays no role): until the time around the beginning of 90’s of last century, the above works had been largely ignored by mathematicians working in arithmetic. This is in fact very much unfortunate and shows us how interesting mathematics is exposed as human being’s activities. By contrast, as we now know, not just as a result these works play a central role in establishing a general non-abelian class field theory for Riemann surfaces, or the same, for function fields over complex numbers, but, all these works are generalizations of Weil’s pioneer work claiming that the assignment $\rho \leftrightarrow E_\rho$ (resp. $\rho \leftrightarrow (E_\rho, \nabla_\rho)$) gives a canonical one-to-one and onto correspondence between irreducible representations of fundamental groups of compact Riemann surfaces and indecomposable degree zero bundles (resp. and indecomposable flat bundles) on the associated Riemann surfaces. And in history, it was

(i) aiming at establishing a general CFT for Riemann surfaces that motivated Weil to prove such a result in his master piece on generalization of abelian functions ([We1]);

(ii) clearly with arithmetic applications in mind that Grothendieck gave a Bourbaki seminar explaining Weil’s work in which the notion of $\pi$-bundles was introduced ([G]).

This unfortunate situation has been gradually changed. Say, at the end of 90’s, There was a short note [W1]. This note is a rediscovery of Weil’s program, starting with a crucial observation that the above correspondences of Weil, Narasimhan-Seshadri and Seshadri can be viewed as a kind of reciprocity law; after all,

(a) the correspondences are relating fundamental groups (reading as analogue of Galois groups) with certain intrinsic algebraic structures (reading as non-abelian analogues and generalizations of ideal classes); and

(b) by using parabolic structures, ramification information can be taken care of completely.

Along with such a line, naturally, these works on stability then further leads to the part of our Program aiming at establishing a general CFT for various fields (using stability) [W1].

2.2 Micro Reciprocity Law

Seshadri’s fundamental works may be summarized as the follows.

**Theorem.** Let $(M^0, M)$ be a punctured Riemann surface. Then we have

(i) **Micro Reciprocity Law** (Weil, Mumford, Narasimhan-Seshadri, Seshidri)

There exists a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence

$$\left\{ \text{irreducible unitary representations of } \pi_1(M^0, *) \right\}$$

$$\cong$$

$$\left\{ \text{stable parabolic bundles of degree zero on } (M^0, M) \right\};$$
(ii) **Ramifications versus Parabolic Structures** ((Grothendieck), Seshadri)

There exists a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence

\[
\begin{align*}
\{ \text{vector bundles } W/M' \text{ with compatible action } \text{Gal}(M'/M) \} \\
\downarrow \\
\{ \text{parabolic bundles } E_\ast/(M^\circ, M) \text{ with compatible parabolic weights} \}
\end{align*}
\]

such that

(i) the correspondence induces a natural one on sub-objects of \( W \) and of \( E_\ast(W) \); and
(ii) the degrees satisfy the relation

\[
\deg(W) = \deg(M'/M) \cdot \text{par.deg}(E_\ast(W)).
\]
Chapter II. CFTs in Geometry

3 Arithmetic CFT: Class Field Theory

Building on the above detailed micro study of individual representation of fundamental groups of Riemann surfaces and hence individual semi-stable parabolic bundle, we can study them from a more global point of view. There are two approaches, one using category theory and the other using moduli theory.

As a starting point of the category approach, let us first consider the category consisting of semi-stable parabolic bundles of (parabolic) degree zero over \((M^0, M)\). Note that, as building blocks of general semi-stable objects, stable ones are very rigid. That is to say, there is no non-trivial morphisms between two stable objects, a fact corresponding to Schur’s Lemma in representation theory (for irreducible representations). Consequently, we conclude that the just formed category admits much finer structures: It is clearly abelian, has a tensor product structure and admits a natural functor \(F\) to the category of finite dimensional vector spaces (the fibers of base bundles to a fixed point of \(M^0\)). Thus, from the rigid properties mentioned above, which guarantees the faithfulness of the functor just mentioned, we see that the category is in fact Tannakian. Denote it by \((PV_{\text{ss}}; 0, M^0, M, F)\). Then, from Tannakian category theory, we obtain the following main theorem of CFT for Riemann surfaces, or the same, for function fields over complex numbers;

Main Theorem of Arithmetic CFT ([W1])

- (Existence) There exists a canonical one-to-one and onto correspondence
  \[
  \big\{ \text{Finitely Generated SubTannakian Cats (} \Sigma, F_{|} ) \text{ of } (PV_{\text{ss}}; 0, M^0, M) \big\}
  \xrightarrow{\quad \cong \quad \Pi \quad \downarrow \quad \text{Finite Galois Coverings } M' \to (M^0, M) \big\}
  \]
  which induces naturally an isomorphism

- (Reciprocity Law)
  \[
  \text{Aut}^{\text{et}}(\Sigma, F_{|}) \cong \text{Gal}(\Pi(\Sigma, F_{|})).
  \]

4 Geometric CFT: Conformal Field Theory

Here we give some most important aspects of the second global approach, namely the one using moduli spaces. As a starting point, for a fixed compact Riemann surface \(M\), denote by \(M_{r}(r, 0)\) the moduli spaces of rank \(r\) semi-stable bundles of degree zero on \(M\). (Recall that then we squeeze semi-stable bundles into their associated Seshadri classes, defined using graded pieces of the associated Jordan-Hölder filtrations.) Over such moduli spaces, we can construct many global invariants. Analytically we may expect that a still ill-defined Feymann integral would give us something interesting. We will not pursue this line further, instead, let us start with an algebraic construction.

Since each moduli point corresponds to a semi-stable vector bundle, it makes sense to talk about the associated cohomology groups. As such, then we may form the so-
called Grothendieck-Mumford determinant line of cohomologies, i.e., the alternative
tensor products of determinants of cohomologies. Consequently, if we move our mod-
uli points over all moduli spaces, we can glue the above determinant lines to form the
so-called Grothendieck-Mumford determinant line bundles $\lambda_M$ on $M_M(r, 0)$. Note that
the Picard group of $M_M(r, 0)$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}$, we see that a suitable multiple of $\lambda_M$ is
indeed very ample. (For all this, we in fact need to restrict ourselves only to the stable
part. Let us assume it was the case now while leaving the details on how to fix it to the
literatures, or better to the reader.) It then makes sense to talk about the $\mathbb{C}$-vector space
$H^0(M_M(r, 0), \lambda_M^\otimes n)$ (for $n$ sufficiently away from 0). This is a finite dimensional vector
space naturally associated to $M$, whose dimension is given by the so-called Verlinde
formula.

The most interesting and certain a very deep point is somehow we expect that the
space itself $H^0(M_M(r, 0), \lambda_M^\otimes n)$, also called conformal blocks, does not really very much
related with the complex structure on the compact Riemann surface $M$ used. (For more
details on Conformal Field Theory, intitated by Belavin-Polykov-Zamodolochikov, see
e.g., [US].) More precisely, let us now move $M$ in $\mathcal{M}_g \hookrightarrow \overline{\mathcal{M}}_g$, the moduli space
of compact Riemann surfaces of genus $g = g(M)$ and its stable compactification of
Deligne-Mumford ([DM]). Denote by $\Delta_{\text{bdy}}$ the boundary of $\mathcal{M}_g$, which is a normal
crossing divisor by Deligne-Mumford theory. Then the conformal blocks form a natu-
ral vector bundle $\Pi_* (\lambda_M^\otimes n)|_{\mathcal{M}_g}$ on $(\mathcal{M}_g \hookrightarrow \overline{\mathcal{M}}_g)$, with which, we may state the following:

**Main Theorem in Geometric CFT:** (Tsuchiya-Ueno-Yamada, see also [Hi]) *There exists a projectively flat logarithmic connection on the bundle $\Pi_* (\lambda_M^\otimes n)|_{\mathcal{M}_g}$ over $(\mathcal{M}_g, \Delta_{\text{bdy}})*.
Part B. High Rank Zeta Functions and Stability

Chapter III. High Rank Zeta Functions

5 Function Fields

5.1 Definition and Basic Properties

Let $C$ be a regular, geometrically irreducible projective curve of genus $g$ defined over $\mathbb{F}_q$, the finite field with $q$ elements and $\mathcal{M}_{C,r}$ the moduli space of semi-stable bundles of rank $r$ over $C$. These spaces are projective varieties. So following Weil, we may try to attach them with the standard Artin-Weil zeta functions. However, there is another more intrinsic way. Namely, instead of simply viewing these moduli spaces as algebraic varieties, we here want to fully use the moduli aspects of these spaces by viewing rational points of these varieties as rational bundles: This is possible at least for the stable part by a work of Harder-Narasimhan on Brauer groups ([HN]). Accordingly, for each rational moduli point, we can have a very natural weighted count. All this then leads to the following

**Definition.** (Weng) The rank $r$ zeta function for $C/\mathbb{F}_q$ is defined by

$$\zeta_{C,\mathbb{F}_q,r}(s) := \sum_{[V] \in \mathcal{M}_{C,r}} \frac{q^{\rho(C,V)} - 1}{\#\text{Aut}(V)} \cdot (q^{-s})^\deg(V), \quad \Re(s) > 1.$$ 

Here as usual, $[V]$ denotes the Seshadri class of (a rational) semi-stable bundle $V$, and $\text{Aut}(V)$ denotes the automorphism group of $V$.

By semi-stable condition, the summation above is only taken over the part of moduli space whose points have non-negative degrees. Thus by the duality, Riemann-Roch and a Clifford type lemma for semi-stable bundles, we then can expose the following basic properties for our zeta functions of curves.

**Zeta Facts** (Weng) (0) $\zeta_{C,1,\mathbb{F}_q}(s)$ is nothing but the classical Artin zeta function $\zeta_{C}(s)$ for curve $C$.

1. $\zeta_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(s)$ is well-defined for $\Re(s) > 1$, and admits a meromorphic continuation to the whole complex $s$-plane;

2. (Rationality) Set $t := q^{-s}$ and introduce the non-abelian Z-function of $C$ by

$$\zeta_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(s) =: Z_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(t) := \sum_{[V] \in \mathcal{M}_{C,r}, d \geq 0} \frac{q^{\rho(C,V)} - 1}{\#\text{Aut}(V)} \cdot t^{\deg(V)}, \quad |t| < 1.$$ 

Then there exists a polynomial $P_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(s) \in \mathbb{Q}[t]$ such that

$$Z_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(t) = \frac{P_{C,r,\mathbb{F}_q}(t)}{(1-t)^{g} (1-q^r t);}$$
(3) **(Functional Equation)** Set the rank $r$ non-abelian $\xi$-function $\xi_{C,r,F_q}(s)$ by

$$\xi_{C,r,F_q}(s) := \zeta_{C,r,F_q}(s) \cdot (q^r)^{r(s-1)}.$$

Then

$$\xi_{C,r,F_q}(s) = \xi_{C,r,F_q}(1 - s).$$

**Remarks.** (1) **(Count in Different Ways)** The above weighted count is designed for all rational semi-stable bundles, motivated by Harder-Narasimhan’s interpretation on Siegel’s work about Tamagawa numbers ([HN]). As such, even the moduli space is used, it does not really play a key role as all elements in a Seshadri class are counted. For this reason, modifications for the definition of high rank zetas can be given, say, count only one within a fixed Seshadri class, or count only what are called strongly semi-stable bundles, etc...

(2) **(Stratifications and Cohomological Interpretations)** Deninger once asked whether there was a cohomological interpretation for our zeta functions. There is a high possibility for it: We expect that our earlier works on refined Brill-Noether loci would play a key role here, since refined Brill-Noether loci induce natural stratifications on moduli spaces. Thus, following Grothendieck’s work on cohomological interpretation of Weil’s zeta functions, what we have to do next is to expose a certain weighted fixed point formula.

### 5.2 Global High Rank Zetas via Euler Products

Let $C$ be a regular, reduced, irreducible projective curve of genus $g$ defined over a number field $F$. Let $S_{\text{bad}}$ be the collection of all infinite places and these finite places of $F$ at which $C$ does not have good reductions. As usual, a place $v$ of $F$ is called good if $v \notin S_{\text{bad}}$. For any good place $v$ of $F$, the $v$-reduction of $C$, denoted as $C_v$, gives a regular, reduced, irreducible projective curve defined over the residue field $F(v)$ of $F$ at $v$. Denote the cardinal number of $F(v)$ by $q_v$. Then, we obtain the associated rank $r$ non-abelian zeta function $\zeta_{C_v,r,F_q}(s)$. Moreover, from the rationality of $\zeta_{C_v,r,F_q}(s)$, there exists a degree $2rg$ polynomial $P_{C_v,r,F_q}(t) \in \mathbb{Q}[t]$ such that

$$Z_{C,v,F_q}(t) = \frac{P_{C_v,r,F_q}(t)}{(1 - t)(1 - q^r t^r)}.$$

Clearly, $P_{C_v,r,F_q}(0) \neq 0$. Set

$$P_{C,v,F(v)}(t) := \frac{P_{C,v,F(v)}(t)}{P_{C,v,F(v)}(0)}.$$

**Definition.** (Weng) The rank $r$ non-abelian zeta function $\zeta_{C,r,F}(s)$ of $C$ over $F$ is defined as the following Euler product

$$\zeta_{C,r,F}(s) := \prod_{v \text{ good}} \frac{1}{P_{C,r,F_q}(q_v^s)^{r}}; \quad \text{Re}(s) \gg 0.$$
Clearly, when \( r = 1 \), \( \zeta_{C,r,F}(s) \) coincides with the classical Hasse-Weil zeta function for \( C \) over \( F \).

**Conjecture.** For a regular, reduced, geometrically irreducible projective curve \( C \) of genus \( g \) defined over a number field \( F \), its associated rank \( r \) global non-abelian zeta function \( \zeta_{C,r,F}(s) \) admits a meromorphic continuation to the whole complex \( s \)-plane.

Recall that even when \( r = 1 \), i.e., for the classical Hasse-Weil zeta functions, this statement, as a part of a series of high profile conjectures is still open. On the other hand, we have the following

**Proposition.** ([W4]) When \( \text{Re}(s) > 1 + g + (r^2 - r)(g - 1) \), \( \zeta_{C,r,F}(s) \) converges.

Like in the theory for abelian zeta functions, we want to use our non-abelian zeta functions to study non-abelian aspect of arithmetic of curves. For this purpose, completed zetas, or better, local factors for ‘bad’ places, should be introduced:

(i) For \( F \)-factors, motivated by the local rationality, we take these associated to \( \zeta_F(rs) \cdot \zeta_F(r(s-1)) \), where \( \zeta_F(s) \) denotes the standard Dedekind zeta function for \( F \); and
(ii) for finite bad factors, first choose a semi-stable model for \( C \) so as to get a semi-stable reduction for curves at bad places. Then, either (a) use Seshadri’s moduli spaces of semi-stable parabolic bundles as suggested in [W4]; or (b) use moduli space of semi-stable bundles over nodal curves, as pointed out by Seshadri.

For the time being, even we know that each produces local factors for singular fibers, usually polynomials with degree lower than \( 2rg \), but we do not know which one is right. To test them, we propose the following functional equation.

**Working Hypothesis.** The completed zeta function \( \xi_{C,r,F}(s) \) of \( C/F \) admits a unique meromorphic continuation to the whole complex \( s \)-plane and satisfies the functional equation

\[
\xi_{C,r,F}(s) = \varepsilon \cdot \xi_{C,r,F}(1 + \frac{1}{r} - s)
\]

with \( |\varepsilon| = 1 \).

## 6 Number Fields

### 6.1 Stability of \( O_F \)-Lattices

Let \( F \) be a number field with \( O_F \) the ring of integer and \( \Delta_F \) the discriminant. By definition, an \( O_F \)-lattice \( A \) of rank \( r \) consists of a pair \((P,\rho)\), where \( P \) is a rank \( r \) projective \( O_F \)-module and \( \rho \) is a metric on the space \((\mathbb{R}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2})^r = (\mathbb{R}^r)^{r_1} \times (\mathbb{C}^r)^{r_2} \), where \( r_1 \) (resp. \( r_2 \)) denotes the number of real embeddings (resp. complex embeddings) of \( F \). Recall that, being projective, there exists a fractional ideal \( \mathfrak{a} \) of \( F \) such that \( P \cong O_F^{-1} \oplus \mathfrak{a} \). Particularly, the natural inclusion \( O_F^{-1} \oplus \mathfrak{a} \hookrightarrow F^r \) induces a natural embedding of \( P \) into \((\mathbb{R}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2})^r \) via the compositions

\[
P \cong O_F^{-1} \oplus \mathfrak{a} \hookrightarrow F^r \hookrightarrow (\mathbb{R}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2})^r \cong (\mathbb{R}^r)^{r_1} \times (\mathbb{C}^r)^{r_2}.
\]
As such, then the image of $P$ naturally offers us a lattice $\Lambda$ in the metrized space $((\mathbb{R}^r)^1 \times (\mathbb{C}^r)^2, \rho)$. By definition, an $O_F$-lattice is called semi-stable if for all sub-$O_F$-lattice $\Lambda_1$ of $\Lambda$, we have

$$\text{Vol}(\Lambda_1)^{\text{rank}(\Lambda)} \geq \text{Vol}(\Lambda)^{\text{rank}(\Lambda_1)},$$

where the volume $\text{Vol}(\Lambda)$ of $\Lambda$ is usually called the covolume of $\Lambda$, namely,

$$\text{Vol}(\Lambda) := \text{Vol}((\mathbb{R}^r)^1 \times (\mathbb{C}^r)^2, \rho)/\Lambda.$$ 

Denote by $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}$ the moduli space of semi-stable $O_F$-lattices of rank $r$, i.e., the space of isomorphism classes of semi-stable $O_F$-lattices of rank $r$. Then there is a natural topological structure on $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}$. In fact there is a much finer structure on it; Denote by $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}[T]$ the volume $T$ part of $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}$, i.e., the part consisting of isomorphisms classes of rank $r$ semi-stable $O_F$-lattices of volume $T$, then

(i) there is a natural decomposition

$$M_{\mathcal{F}, r} = \bigcup_{T \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}} M_{\mathcal{F}, r}[T];$$

Moreover,

(ii) for each fixed $T$, $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}[T]$ is compact; and

(iii) there are natural measures $d\mu$ on $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}$ such that

$$d\mu = d\mu\big|_{M_{\mathcal{F}, r}[|\Delta|]} \times \frac{dT}{T}.$$ 

(The compactness of $M_{\mathcal{F}, r}[T]$ is the main reason why we use the stability condition in the study of non-abelian zetas in [W5].)

### 6.2 Geo-Arithmetical Cohomology

Let $\Lambda$ be an $O_F$-lattice. Then define its geo-arithmetical cohomology groups by

$$H^0(F, \Lambda) := \Lambda,$n

and

$$H^1(F, \Lambda) := \left((\mathbb{R}^r)^1 \times (\mathbb{C}^r)^2\right)'/\Lambda.$$

As such, unlike in algebraic geometry and/or in arithmetic geometry, cohomological groups $H^i$ are not vector spaces, but locally compact topological groups.

With this simple but genuine definition, then the basic properties such as the duality and the Riemann-Roch theorem can be realized as follows;

**Pontrjagin Duality (Weng)** There is a natural topological isomorphism

$$H^1(F, \Lambda) \cong H^0(F, \omega_F \otimes \Lambda^\vee)$$

where $\omega_F := (\mathcal{F}, \rho_\alpha)$ denotes the differential lattice of $F$, namely, the (rank one) projective module given by the standard differential module $\mathcal{F}$ of $O_F$, and the metric given by the standard metric $\rho_\alpha$ on $\mathbb{R}^r \otimes \mathbb{C}^2$. 

22
Moreover, since $H^{0,1}(F, \Lambda)$ are locally compact topological groups, we can apply Fourier analysis to introduce quantitative invariants for them ([F]), say, for $h^0$, or better for $exp(h^0)$, counting each element $x \in H^0(F, \Lambda)$, (which is nothing but the lattice $\Lambda$ itself,) with weight of the Gaussian distribution

$$e^{-\pi \sum_{s \cdot \mathbf{x}} \|s\|_\sigma - 2\pi \sum_{c \cdot \mathbf{x}} \|s\|_\tau}.$$  

(As such, this definition then coincides with the one previously introduced by van der Geer and Schoof, for which an arithmetic analogue of effectiveness is used ([GS]).)

Geo-Arithmetical Riemann-Roch Theorem. (Weng) For an $O_F$-lattice $\Lambda$, 

$$h^0(F, \Lambda) - h^1(F, \Lambda) = \deg(V) - \frac{\text{rank}(\Lambda)}{2} \cdot \log |\Delta_F|.$$ 

Our Riemann-Roch is a direct consequence of the Fourier inversion formula, reflecting the topological Poincaré dual above, and the standard Poisson summation formula. So it has its roots in Tate’s Thesis ([Ta1]), even our result is not really there. 

In the above RR, $\deg(V)$ denotes what we call Arakelov degree of $V$. In fact, in Arakelov geometry, there is the following Arakelov Riemann-Roch Theorem. (See e.g. [L1,2,3])

$$-\log \left( \text{Vol}(\Lambda) \right) = \deg(V) - \frac{\text{rank}(\Lambda)}{2} \cdot \log |\Delta_F|.$$ 

From this, it is simple to see that the above definition of ours for semi-stable $O_F$-lattices is equivalent to the following definition in [St1]: an $O_F$-lattice is semi-stable if for all sub-$O_F$-lattice $\Lambda_1$ of $\Lambda$, we have

$$\frac{\deg(\Lambda_1)}{\text{rank}(\Lambda_1)} \leq \frac{\text{rank}(\Lambda)}{\text{rank}(\Lambda)},$$

an arithmetic-geometric analogue of the slope stability condition of Mumford for vector bundles over compact Riemann surfaces: A vector bundle $V$ over a compact Riemann surface $M$ is semi-stable if for all subbundles $V_1$, 

$$\frac{\deg(V_1)}{\text{rank}(V_1)} \leq \frac{\deg(V)}{\text{rank}(V)}.$$  

6.3 High Rank Zetas

With the above preparation, we are ready to state the following

Definition. (Weng) The rank $r$ zeta function of $F$ is defined by 

$$\xi_{F,r}(s) := \left( |\Delta_F| \right)^{\frac{s}{r}} \cdot \int_{M_{r,s}} \left( e^{h^0(F, \lambda)} - 1 \right) \cdot \left( e^{-s} \right)^{\deg(\lambda)} \cdot \mu(\lambda), \quad \text{Re}(s) > 1.$$ 

Tautologically, from the duality and the geo-arithmetical Riemann-Roch, we obtain the following standard properties for the high rank zeta functions (see however [We2]):
Zeta Facts. (Weng) (0) (Iwasawa) \( \xi_{F,1}(s) \equiv \xi_F(s) \), the completed Dedekind zeta for \( F \);

1. **Meromorphic Extension** Non-abelian zeta function

\[
\xi_{F,r}(s) := \left( |\Delta_F|^2 \right)^s \int_{\Lambda \in \mathcal{M}_F} \left( e^{\rho(F,\Lambda)} - 1 \right) (e^{-s} \deg(\Lambda)) \cdot d\mu
\]

converges absolutely and uniformly when Re\( (s) \geq 1 + \delta \) for any \( \delta > 0 \). Moreover, \( \xi_{F,r}(s) \) admits a unique meromorphic continuation to the whole complex \( s \)-plane;

2. **Functional Equation** The extended \( \xi_{F,r}(s) \) satisfies the functional equation

\[
\xi_{F,r}(s) = \xi_{F,r}(1 - s);
\]

3. **Singularities** The extended \( \xi_{F,r}(s) \) has two singularities, all simple poles, at \( s = 0 \), with

\[
\text{Res}_{s=0} \xi_{F,r}(s) = -\text{Res}_{s=0} \xi_{F,r}(s) = \text{Vol}(\mathcal{M}_{F,r}[|\Delta_F|^2]).
\]
Chapter IV. Geometric Characterization of Stability

Here we give an example on how to characterize stability in geometric terms. More precisely, in this chapter, we will offer a characterization of semi-stable rank two $O_F$-lattices in terms of a Siegel type distance to cusps. We will present the materials in a classical way in which many fundamental results of algebraic number theory will be used. The main results are listed in §8 and §9.

7 Upper Half Space Model

7.1 Upper Half Plane

As usual, denote by \( \mathcal{H} := \{ z = x + iy \in \mathbb{C} : x \in \mathbb{R}, y \in \mathbb{R}_+^* \} \), the upper half plane. The group \( SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \) naturally acts on \( \mathcal{H} \) via:

\[
M z := \frac{az + b}{cz + d}, \quad \forall M = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, \mathbb{R}), \ z \in \mathcal{H}.
\]

The stabilizer of \( i = (0, 1) \in \mathcal{H} \) is equal to \( SO(2) := \{ A \in O(2) : \det A = 1 \} \). Since this action is transitive, we can identify the quotient \( SL(2, \mathbb{R})/SO(2) \) with \( \mathcal{H} \) by the quotient map induced from \( SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \to \mathcal{H}, \ g \mapsto g \cdot i \).

\( \mathcal{H} \) admits the real line \( \mathbb{R} \) as its boundary. Consequently, to compactify it, we add on it the real projective line \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \) with \( \infty = \begin{pmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \end{pmatrix} \). Naturally, the above action of \( SL(2, \mathbb{R}) \) also extends to \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \) via

\[
\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} ax + by \\ cx + dy \end{pmatrix}.
\]

7.2 Upper Half Space

Similarly, 3-dimensional hyperbolic space is defined to be

\[
\mathbb{H} := \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{R}_+^* \cup \{ z = x + iy \in \mathbb{C}, r \in \mathbb{R}_+^* \},
\]

\[
= \{(x, y, r) : x, y \in \mathbb{R}, r \in \mathbb{R}_+^* \}.
\]

We will think of \( \mathbb{H} \) as a subset of Hamilton’s quaternions with 1, i, j, k the standard \( \mathbb{R} \)-basis. Write points \( P \) in \( \mathbb{H} \) as

\[
P = (z, r) = (x, y, r) = z + rj \quad \text{where} \ z = x + iy, \ j = (0, 0, 1).
\]

The natural action of \( SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \) on \( \mathbb{H} \) and on its boundary \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) may be described as follows: We represent an element of \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) by \( \begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \end{pmatrix} \) where \( x, y \in \mathbb{C} \) with \( (x, y) \neq (0, 0) \).
Then the action of the matrix \( M = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \) on \( \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C}) \) is defined to be

\[
\begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \end{pmatrix} \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x \\ y \end{pmatrix} := \begin{pmatrix} ax + by \\ cx + dy \end{pmatrix}.
\]

Moreover, if we represent points \( P \in \mathbb{H} \) as quaternions whose fourth component equals zero, then the action of \( M \) on \( \mathbb{H} \) is defined to be

\[ P \mapsto MP := (aP + b)(cP + d)^{-1}, \]

where the inverse on the right is taken in the skew field of quaternions.

Furthermore, with this action, the stabilizer of \( j = (0,0,1) \in \mathbb{H} \) in \( SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \) is equal to \( SU(2) := \{ A \in U(2) : \det A = 1 \} \). Since the action of \( SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \) on \( \mathbb{H} \) is transitive, we obtain also a natural identification \( \mathbb{H} \cong SL(2, \mathbb{C})/SU(2) \) via the quotient map induced from \( SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \to \mathbb{H}, \ g \mapsto g \cdot j \).

### 7.3 Rank Two \( O_F \)-Lattices: Upper Half Space Model

Identify \( \mathcal{H} \) with \( SL(2, \mathbb{R})/SO(2) \) and \( \mathbb{H} \) with \( SL(2, \mathbb{C})/SU(2) \). Denote by \( M_{F,2,a} \) the moduli space of semi-stable lattices of rank two whose associated projective models are isomorphic to \( O_F \oplus a \) for a certain ideal \( a \), and denote its volume \( T \) part by \( M_{F,2,a}[T] \).

Make the identification

\[
M_{F,2,a}[N(a) \cdot \Delta_F] \approx \left( SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash \left( \mathcal{H} \times \mathbb{H}^2 \right) \right)_{ss},
\]

where as usual ss means the subset consisting of points corresponding to rank two semi-stable \( O_F \)-lattices in the quotient space

\[
SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash \left( SL(2, \mathbb{R})/SO(2) \right)^{(1)} \times \left( SL(2, \mathbb{C})/SU(2) \right)^{(2)}.
\]

Hence clearly, if the metric on \( O_F \oplus a \) is given by \( g = (g_{\sigma})_{\sigma \in S_{\infty}} \) with \( g_{\sigma} \in SL(2, F_{\sigma}) \), then the corresponding points on the right hand side is \( g(\text{Im}) \) with \( \text{Im} := (f^{(1)}, f^{(2)}) \), i.e., the point given by \( (g_{\sigma} \tau_{\sigma})_{\sigma \in S_{\infty}} \) where \( \tau_{\sigma} = i_{\sigma} := (0,1) \) if \( \sigma \) is real and \( \tau_{\sigma} = j_{\sigma} := (0,0,1) \) if \( \sigma \) is complex.

### 8 Cusps

#### 8.1 Definition

The working site now is shifted to the space \( SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash \left( \mathcal{H} \times \mathbb{H}^2 \right) \). Here the action of \( SL(2, O_F \oplus a) \) is via the action of \( SL(2, F) \) on \( \mathcal{H} \times \mathbb{H}^2 \). More precisely, \( F^2 \) admits natural embeddings \( F^2 \hookrightarrow (\mathbb{R}^2 \times \mathbb{C}^2)^2 \approx (\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \times (\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \) so that \( O_F \oplus a \) naturally embeds into \( (\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \times (\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \) as a rank two \( O_F \)-lattice. As such, \( SL(O_F \oplus a) \) acts on the image of \( O_F \oplus a \) in \( (\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \times (\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C})^2 \) as automorphisms. Our task here is to understand the cusps of this action of \( SL(O_F \oplus a) \) on \( \mathcal{H} \times \mathbb{H}^2 \). For this, we go as follows.
First, the space $\mathcal{H}^n \times \mathbb{H}^n$ admits a natural boundary $\mathbb{R}^n \times \mathbb{C}^n$, in which the field $F$ is imbedded via Archmidean places of $F$: $F \hookrightarrow \mathbb{R}^n \times \mathbb{C}^n$. Consequently, $\mathbb{P}^1(F) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})^n \times \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})^n$ with $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$ := $\infty \mapsto (\infty^{(r_1)}, \infty^{(r_2)})$. As usual, via fractional linear transformations, $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$ acts on $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})$, and $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ acts on $\mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})$, hence so does $SL(2, F)$ on $\mathbb{P}^1(F) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{R})^n \times \mathbb{P}^1(\mathbb{C})^n$.

Being a discrete subgroup of $SL(2, \mathbb{R})^n \times SL(2, \mathbb{C})^n$, for the action of $SL(O_F \oplus a)$ on $\mathbb{P}^1(F)$, we call the corresponding orbits (of $SL(O_F \oplus a)$ on $\mathbb{P}^1(F)$) the *cusps*. Very often we also call their associated representatives *cusps*.

### 8.2 Cusp and Ideal Class Correspondence

With this, we have the following fundamental result rooted back to Maaß.

**Cusp and Ideal Class Correspondence.** (Maaß) *There is a natural bijection $\Pi$ between the ideal class group $CL(F)$ of $F$ and the cusps $C_{\Gamma}$ of $\Gamma = SL(O_F \oplus a)$ acting on $\mathcal{H}^n \times \mathbb{H}^n$ given by*

$$C_{\Gamma} \rightarrow CL(F), \quad \begin{bmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{bmatrix} \mapsto \left[ O_F \alpha + a \beta \right].$$

Easily, one checks that the inverse map $\Pi^{-1}$ is given as follows: For a fractional ideal $b$, by Chinese Reminder Theorem, choose $\alpha_b, \beta_b \in F$ such that $O_F \cdot \alpha_b + a \cdot \beta_b = b$.

Define $\Pi^{-1}(b)$ simply by the class of the point $\begin{bmatrix} \alpha_b \\ \beta_b \end{bmatrix}$ in $SL(2, O_F \oplus a) \mathbb{P}^1(F)$. Recall also that there always exists $M_{\begin{bmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{bmatrix}} := \left( \begin{array}{c} \alpha \\ \beta \alpha^* \beta \end{array} \right) \in SL(2, F)$ such that $M_{\begin{bmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{bmatrix}} \cdot \infty = \left[ \alpha \right]$. 

### 8.3 Stablizer Groups of Cusps

Recall that under the Cusp-Ideal Class Correspondence, there are exactly $h$ inequivalence cusps $\eta_i$, $i = 1, 2, \ldots, h$, where $h := \#CL(F)$. Moreover, if we write the cusp $\eta := \eta_i = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha_i \\ \beta_i \end{bmatrix}$ for suitable $\alpha_i, \beta_i \in F$, then the associated ideal class is exactly the one for the fractional ideal $O_F \alpha_i + a \beta_i = b_i$. Denote the stabilizer group of $\eta$ in $SL(O_F \oplus a)$ by $\Gamma_\eta$.

**Lemma.** ([W-2.5]) *The associated ‘lattice’ for the cusp $\eta$ is given by $ab^{-2}$. Namely,*

$$A^{-1} \Gamma_\eta A = \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} u & z \\ 0 & u^{-1} \end{bmatrix} : u \in U_F, z \in ab^{-2} \right\},$$

*where $U_F$ denotes the group of units of $F$. *
Set $\Gamma'_n := \left\{ A \begin{pmatrix} 1 & z \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} A^{-1} : z \in \mathbb{a} \mathbb{b}^{-2} \right\}$. Then

$$
\Gamma_n = \Gamma'_n \times \left\{ A \begin{pmatrix} u & 0 \\ 0 & u^{-1} \end{pmatrix} A^{-1} : u \in U_F \right\}.
$$

Note that also componentwisely, $\left( \begin{pmatrix} u & 0 \\ 0 & u^{-1} \end{pmatrix} \right) z = \frac{w^2}{w^1} = u^2 z$. So, in practice, what we really get is the following decomposition

$$
\Gamma_n = \Gamma'_n \times U_f^2
$$

with

$$
U_f^2 \simeq \left\{ A \begin{pmatrix} u & 0 \\ 0 & u^{-1} \end{pmatrix} A^{-1} : u \in U_F \right\} \simeq \left\{ A \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & u^2 \end{pmatrix} A^{-1} : u \in U_F \right\}.
$$

### 8.4 Fundamental Domain for $\Gamma_\infty$ on $\mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2}$

We are now ready to construct a fundamental domain for the action of $\Gamma_n \subset SL(O_F \oplus \mathfrak{a})$ on $\mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2}$. This is based on a construction of a fundamental domain for the action of $\Gamma_\infty$ on $\mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2}$. More precisely, with an element $A = \begin{pmatrix} \alpha & \alpha^* \\ \beta & \beta^* \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, F)$ (always exists!), we have

i) $A \cdot \infty = \begin{pmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{pmatrix}$; and

ii) The isotropy group of $\eta$ in $A^{-1}SL(O_F \oplus \mathfrak{a})A$ is generated by translations $\tau \mapsto \tau + z$ with $z \in \mathbb{a} \mathbb{b}^{-2}$ and by dilations $\tau \mapsto u \tau$ where $u$ runs through the group $U_f^2$.

(Here, we use $A, \alpha, \beta, b$ as running symbols for $A_1, \alpha_i, \beta_i, b_i := O_F \alpha_i + \alpha \beta_i$.)

Consider then the map

$$
\text{ImJ} : \mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2} \to \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2},
$$

$$(z_1, \cdots, z_{r_2} : P_1, \cdots, P_{r_2}) \mapsto (\mathfrak{I}(z_1), \cdots, \mathfrak{I}(z_{r_2}); J(P_1), \cdots, J(P_{r_2})),
$$

where if $z = x + iy \in \mathcal{H}$, resp. $P = z + r j \in \mathbb{H}$, we set $\mathfrak{I}(z) = y$, resp. $J(P) = r$. It induces a map

$$
\left( A^{-1} \cdot \Gamma_n \cdot A \right) \left( \mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2} \right) \to U_f^2 \backslash \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2},
$$

which exhibits $\left( A^{-1} \cdot \Gamma_n \cdot A \right) \left( \mathcal{H}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{H}^{r_2} \right)$ as a torus bundle over $U_f^2 \backslash \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2}$ with fiber $\mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + 2r_2}$ dimensional torus $\left( \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2} \right)/\mathbb{a} \mathbb{b}^{-2}$. Having factored out the action of the translations, we only have to construct a fundamental domain for the action of $U_f^2$ on $\mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2}$. For this, we look first at the action of $U_f^2$ on the norm-one hypersurface

$$
S := \left\{ y \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2} : N(y) =: \prod_i y_i = 1 \right\}.
$$

By taking logarithms, it is transformed bijectively into a trace-zero hyperplane which is isomorphic to the space $\mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2 - 1}$

$$
S \log \to \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2 - 1} := \left\{ (a_1, \cdots, a_{r_1 + r_2}) \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^{r_1 + r_2} : \sum a_i = 0 \right\},
$$

$$
y \mapsto \left( \log y_1, \cdots, \log y_{r_1 + r_2} \right).
$$
where the action of $U_F^2$ on $S$ is carried out over an action on $\mathbb{R}^{r_1+r_2}$ by the translations $a_i \mapsto a_i + \log e^{0i}$. By Dirichlet’s Unit Theorem ([L1], [Ne]), the logarithm transforms $U_F^2$ into a lattice in $\mathbb{R}^{r_1+r_2}$. Accordingly, the exponential map transforms a fundamental domain, e.g., a fundamental parallelopiped, for this action back into a fundamental domain $S_{U_F^2}$ for the action of $U_F^2$ on $S$. The cone over $S_{U_F^2}$, that is, $\mathbb{R}_{>0} \cdot S_{U_F^2} \subset \mathbb{R}^{r_1+r_2}$, is then a fundamental domain for the action of $U_F^2$ on $\mathbb{R}^{r_1+r_2}$. Denote by $\mathcal{T}$ a fundamental domain for the action of the translations by elements of $ab^{-2}$ on $\mathbb{R}^r \times \mathbb{C}^2$, and set

$$\text{Re} Z(z_1, \ldots, z_i; P_1, \ldots, P_r) := \left(\Re (z_1), \ldots, \Re (z_i), \Re (P_1), \ldots, \Re (P_r)\right)$$

with $\Re (z) := x$, resp. $Z(P) := z$ if $z = x + iy \in \mathcal{H}$, resp. $P = z + rj \in \mathbb{R}$, then what we have just said proves the following

**Proposition.** ([W-2.5]) A fundamental domain for the action of $A^{-1} \Gamma_\eta A$ on $\mathcal{H}^r \times \mathbb{H}^2$ is given by

$$E := \{\tau \in \mathcal{H}^r \times \mathbb{H}^2 : \text{Re} Z(\tau) \in \mathcal{T}, \text{Im} J(\tau) \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \cdot S_{U_F^2}\}.$$

For later use, we also set $\mathcal{F}_\eta := A^{-1} \cdot E$.

## 9 Fundamental Domain

### 9.1 Siegel Type Distance

Guided by Siegel’s discussion on totally real fields [Sie] and the discussion above, we are now ready to construct fundamental domains for \(SL(O_F)\). Guided by Siegel’s discussion on totally real fields [Sie] and the discussion above, we are now ready to construct fundamental domains for $SL(O_F) \oplus 0$ of $\mathcal{H}^r \times \mathbb{H}^2$.

As the first step, we generalize Siegel’s ‘distance to cusps’. For this, recall that for a cusp $\eta = \left[\begin{array}{c} \alpha \\ \beta \end{array}\right] \in \mathbb{P}^1(F)$, by the Cusp-Ideal Class Correspondence, we obtain a natural ideal class associated to the fractional ideal $b := O_F \cdot \alpha + \alpha \cdot \beta$. Moreover, by assuming that $\alpha, \beta$ are all contained in $O_F$, as we may, we know that the corresponding stablizer group $\Gamma_\eta$ is given by

$$A^{-1} \cdot \Gamma_\eta \cdot A = \left\{\gamma = \left(\begin{array}{cc} u & z \\ 0 & u^{-1} \end{array}\right) \in \Gamma : u \in U_F, z \in ab^{-2}\right\},$$

where $A \in SL(2, F)$ satisfying $A\infty = \eta$ which may be further chosen in the form $A = \left(\begin{array}{cc} \alpha & \alpha' \\ \beta & \beta' \end{array}\right) \in SL(2, F)$ so that $O_F \beta' + \alpha' \alpha = 1$.

Now for $\tau = (z_1, \ldots, z_i; P_1, \ldots, P_r) \in \mathcal{H}^r \times \mathbb{H}^2$, set

$$N(\tau) := N(\text{Im} J(\tau)) = \prod_{i=1}^{r_1} S(z_i) \cdot \prod_{j=1}^{r_2} J(P_j)^2 = (y_1 \cdots y_{r_1}) \cdot (v_1 \cdots v_{r_2})^2.$$

Then for all $\gamma = \left(\begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ c & d \end{array}\right) \in SL(2, F)$,

$$N(\text{Im}(\gamma \cdot \tau)) = \frac{N(\text{Im}(\tau))}{N(c\tau + d)^2}. \quad (*)$$

29
(Note that here only the second row of $\gamma$ appears.) Moreover, following [W-2.5], define the reciprocal distance $\mu(\eta, \tau)$ from the point $\tau \in H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2$ to the cusp $\eta = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{bmatrix}$ in $\mathbb{P}^1(F)$ by

$$\mu(\eta, \tau) := N\left(\frac{1}{\alpha} \cdot (\mathcal{O}_F \alpha + \eta \beta)^2 \right) \times \prod_{i=1}^n \left(\frac{\mathcal{J}(z_i)}{\mathcal{J}(z_i + \eta \beta)} \cdot (\mathcal{J}(z_i) \cdot J(\zeta_i)^2 \prod_{j=1}^{\ell} \| (-\beta^{10} \zeta_i + \alpha^{10})_j \|^2 \right) \times \frac{1}{N(\text{Im}(\tau))} \cdot \frac{N(\text{Im}(\eta))}{\|N(-\beta \tau + \alpha)\|^2}.$$ 

Lemma 1. ([W-2.5]) (i) $\mu$ is well-defined;
(ii) $\mu$ is invariant under the action of $SL(O_F \oplus a)$. That is to say,

$$\mu(\gamma \eta, \gamma \tau) = \mu(\eta, \tau), \quad \forall \gamma \in SL(O_F \oplus a).$$

(iii) There exists a positive constant $C$ depending only on $F$ and $a$ such that if $\mu(\eta, \tau) > C$ and $\mu(\eta', \tau) > C$ for $\tau \in H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2$ and $\eta, \eta' \in \mathbb{P}^1(F)$, then $\eta = \eta'$.
(iv) There exists a positive real number $T := T(F)$ depending only on $F$ such that for $\tau \in H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2$, there exists a cusp $\eta$ such that $\mu(\eta, \tau) > T$.

Now for the cusp $\eta = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{P}^1(F)$, define the 'sphere of influence' of $\eta$ by

$$F_\eta := \left\{ \tau \in H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2 : \mu(\eta, \tau) \geq \mu(\eta', \tau), \forall \eta' \in \mathbb{P}^1(F) \right\}.$$ 

Lemma 2. ([W-2.5]) The action of $SL(O_F \oplus a)$ in the interior $F^0_\eta$ of $F_\eta$ reduces to that of the isotropy group $\Gamma_\eta$ of $\eta$, i.e., if $\tau$ and $\gamma \tau$ both belong to $F^0_\eta$, then $\gamma \tau = \tau$.

Consequently, we arrive at the following way to decompose the orbit space $SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash (H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2)$ into $h$ pieces glued in some way along pants of their boundary.

Proposition. ([W-2.5]) Let $i_\eta : \Gamma_\eta \backslash F_\eta \hookrightarrow SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash (H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2)$ denote the natural map. Then

$$SL(O_F \oplus a) \backslash (H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2) = \bigcup_\eta i_\eta(\Gamma_\eta \backslash F_\eta),$$

where the union is taken over a set of $h$ cusps representing the ideal classes of $F$. Each piece corresponds to an ideal class of $F$.

Note that the action of $\Gamma_\eta$ on $H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2$ is free. Consequently, all fixed points of $SL(O_F \oplus a)$ on $H^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2$ lie on the boundaries of $F_\eta$.

9.2 Fundamental Domains

We can give a more precise description of the fundamental domain, based on our understanding of that for stabilizer groups of cusps. To state it, denote by $\eta_1, \ldots, \eta_h$
inequivalent cusps for the action of \( SL(\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a) \) on \( H^1 \times H^2 \). Choose \( A_n \in SL(2, F) \) such that \( A_n \infty = \eta_i \), \( i = 1, 2, \ldots, h \). Write \( S \) for the norm-one hypersurface \( S := \{ y \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}^n : N(y) = 1 \} \), and \( S_t^\eta \) for the action of \( U_F^2 \) on \( S \). Denote by \( T \) a fundamental domain for the action of the translations by elements of \( ab^{-2} \) on \( \mathbb{R}^n \times \mathbb{C}^2 \), and

\[
E := \{ \tau \in H^1 \times H^2 : \text{ReZ}(\tau) \in T, \text{ImJ} (\tau) \in \mathbb{R}_{>0} \cdot S_t^\eta \}
\]

a fundamental domain for the action of \( A^{-1}_n \Gamma \eta A_n \) on \( H^1 \times H^2 \). The intersections of \( E \) with \( i_\eta(F_\eta) \) are connected. Consequently, we have the following

**Proposition.** (Siegel, Weng) (1) \( D_\eta = A^{-1}_n \Gamma \eta A_n \cap E \) is a fundamental domain for the action of \( \Gamma \eta \) on \( F_\eta \);
(2) There exist \( \alpha_1, \cdots, \alpha_h \in SL(\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a) \) such that \( \cup_{i=1}^h \alpha(D_\eta) \) is connected and hence a fundamental domain for \( SL(\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a) \).

That is to say, a fundamental domain may be given as \( S \cup F_1(Y_1) \cup \cdots \cup F_h(Y_h) \) with \( S \) bounded, \( F_i(Y_i) = A_i \cdot \tilde{F}_i(Y_i) \) and

\[
\tilde{F}_i(Y_i) := \{ \tau \in H^1 \times H^2 : \text{ReZ}(\tau) \in \Sigma, \text{ImJ}(\tau) \in \mathbb{R}_{>T} \cdot S_t^\eta \}.
\]

Moreover, all \( F_i(Y_i)'s \) are disjoint from each other when \( Y_i \) are sufficiently large.

## 10 Stability in Rank Two

### 10.1 Stability and Distances to Cusps

Define now the *distance of \( \tau \) to the cusp \( \eta \) by*

\[
d(\eta, \tau) := \frac{1}{\mu(\eta, \tau)} \geq 1.
\]

Then, with the use of a crucial result of Tsukasa Hayashi [Ha], we are ready to state the following fundamental result, which exposes a beautiful intrinsic relation between stability and the distance to cusps.

**Theorem.** (Weng) The lattice \( \Lambda \) is semi-stable if and only if the distances of corresponding point \( \tau_\Lambda \in H^1 \times H^2 \) to all cusps are all bigger or equal to 1.

### 10.2 Moduli Space of Rank Two Semi-Stable \( O_F \)-Lattices

For a rank two \( O_F \)-lattice \( \Lambda \), denote by \( \tau_\Lambda \in H^1 \times H^2 \) the corresponding module point. Then, by the previous subsection, \( \Lambda \) is semi-stable if and only if for all cusps \( \eta \),

\[
d(\eta, \tau_\Lambda) := \frac{1}{\mu(\eta, \tau_\Lambda)} \text{ are bigger than or equal to } 1.
\]

This then leads to the consideration of the following truncation of the fundamental domain \( \mathcal{D} \) of \( SL(\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a)(H^1 \times H^2) \): For \( T \geq 1 \), denote by

\[
\mathcal{D}_T := \{ \tau \in \mathcal{D} : d(\eta, \tau) \geq T^{-1}, \forall \text{cusp } \eta \}.
\]
The space $\mathcal{D}_T$ may be precisely described in terms of $\mathcal{D}$ and certain neighborhood of cusps. To explain this, we first recall the following

**Lemma.** ([W-2.5]) For a cusp $\eta$, denote by

$$X_\eta(T) := \{ \tau \in \mathcal{H}^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2 : d(\eta, \tau) < T^{-1} \}.$$

Then for $T \geq 1$,

$$X_{\eta_1}(T) \cap X_{\eta_2}(T) \neq \emptyset \iff \eta_1 = \eta_2.$$

With this, we are ready to state the following

**Theorem.** (Weng) There is a natural identification between

(a) moduli space of rank two semi-stable $\mathcal{O}_F$-lattices of volume $N(a) \cdot |\Delta_F|$ with underlying projective module $\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a$; and

(b) truncated compact domain $\mathcal{D}_1$ consisting of points in the fundamental domain $\mathcal{D}$ whose distances to all cusps are bigger than 1.

In other words, the truncated compact domain $\mathcal{D}_1$ is obtained from the fundamental domain $\mathcal{D}$ of $SL(\mathcal{O}_F \oplus a) \backslash (\mathcal{H}^1 \times \mathbb{H}^2)$ by deleting the disjoint open neighborhoods $\cup_{i=1}^h \mathcal{F}_i(T)$ associated to inequivalent cusps $\eta_1, \eta_2, \ldots, \eta_h$, where $\mathcal{F}_i(T)$ denotes the neighborhood of $\eta_i$ consisting of $\tau \in \mathcal{D}$ whose distance to $\eta_i$ is strictly less than $T^{-1}$.
11 Canonical Filtrations

11.1 Canonical Filtrations

Following Lafforgue [Laf], we call an abelian category $\mathcal{A}$ together with two additive morphisms

$$
rk : \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathbb{N}, \quad \deg : \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}
$$

a category with slope structure. In particular, for non-zero $A \in \mathcal{A}$,

1. Define the slope of $A$ by $\mu(A) := \frac{\deg(A)}{rk(A)}$;

2. If $0 = A_0 \subset A_1 \subset \cdots \subset A_l = A$ is a filtration of $A$ in $\mathcal{A}$ with $rk(A_0) < rk(A_1) < \cdots < rk(A_l)$, define the associated polygon to be the function $[0, rk(A)] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ such that
   (i) its values at 0 and $rk(A)$ are 0;
   (ii) it is affine on the intervals $[rk(A_{i-1}), rk(A_i)]$ with slope $\mu(A_i/A_{i-1}) - \mu(A)$;

3. If $a$ is a collection of subobjects of $A$ in $\mathcal{A}$, then $a$ is said to be nice if
   (i) $a$ is stable under intersection and finite summation;
   (ii) $a$ is Noetherian, i.e., every increasing chain of elements in $a$ has a maximal element in $a$;
   (iii) if $A_1 \in a$ then $A_1 \neq 0$ if and only if $rk(A_1) \neq 0$; and
   (iv) for $A_1, A_2 \in a$ with $rk(A_1) = rk(A_2)$, then $A_1 \subset A_2$ is proper implies that $deg(A_1) < deg(A_2)$;

4. For any nice $a$, set

$$
\mu^+(A) := \sup \{ \mu(A_1) : A_1 \in a, rk(A_1) \geq 1 \},
\mu^-(A) := \inf \{ \mu(A_1/A) : A_1 \in a, rk(A_1) < rk(A) \}.
$$

Then we say $(A, a)$ is semi-stable if $\mu^+(A) = \mu(A) = \mu^-(A)$. Moreover if $rk(A) = 0$, set also $\mu^+(A) = -\infty$ and $\mu^-(A) = +\infty$.

**Proposition 1.** ([Laf]) Let $\mathcal{A}$ be a category with slope structure, $A$ an object in $\mathcal{A}$ and $a$ a nice family of subobjects of $A$ in $\mathcal{A}$. Then

1. (Canonical Filtration) $A$ admits a unique filtration $0 = A_0 \subset A_1 \subset \cdots \subset A_l = A$ with elements in $a$ such that
   (i) $A_i, 0 \leq i \leq k$ are maximal in $a$;
   (ii) $A_i/A_{i-1}$ are semi-stable; and
   (iii) $\mu(A_1/A_0) > \mu(A_2/A_1) > \cdots > \mu(A_k/A_{k-1})$;

2. (Boundness) All polygons of filtrations of $A$ with elements in $a$ are bounded from above by $\mathcal{P}$, where $\mathcal{P} := \mathcal{P}^a$ is the associated polygon for the canonical filtration in (1);

3. For any $A_1 \in a$, $rk(A_1) \geq 1$ implies $\mu(A_1) \leq \mu(A) + \frac{\mu(A_1/A)}{rk(A)}$;

4. The polygon $\mathcal{P}$ is convex with maximal slope $\mu^+(A) - \mu(A)$ and minimal slope $\mu^-(A) - \mu(A)$;

33
(5) If \((A', a')\) is another pair, and \(u : A \to A'\) is a homomorphism such that \(\operatorname{Ker}(u) \in a\) and \(\operatorname{Im}(u) \in a'\). Then \(\mu^-(A) \geq \mu^+(A')\) implies that \(u = 0\).

This results from a Harder-Narasimhan type filtration consideration. A detailed proof may be found at pp. 87-88 in [Laf]. (There are some interesting approaches related to the topics here in literatures. For examples, [An2], [Ch].)

11.2 Examples of Lattices

As an example, we have the following

**Proposition 2. ([W2,3])** Let \(F\) be a number field. Then

1. the abelian category of hermitian vector sheaves on \(\operatorname{Spec} O_F\) together with the natural rank and the Arakelov degree is a category with slopes;
2. For any hermitian vector sheaf \((E, \rho)\), a consisting of pairs \((E_1, \rho_1)\) with \(E_1\) sub vector sheaves of \(E\) and \(\rho_1\) the restrictions of \(\rho\), forms a nice family.

Indeed, (1) is obvious, while (2) is a direct consequence of the following standard facts:

1. For a fixed \((E, \rho)\), \(\{\deg(E_1, \rho_1) : (E_1, \rho_1) \in a\}\) is discrete subset of \(\mathbb{R}\); and
2. for any two sublattices \(\Lambda_1, \Lambda_2\) of \(\Lambda\),

\[
\operatorname{Vol}(\Lambda_1/(\Lambda_1 \cap \Lambda_2)) \geq \operatorname{Vol}((\Lambda_1 + \Lambda_2)/\Lambda_2).
\]

Consequently, there exists canonical filtrations of Harder-Narasimhan type for hermitian vector sheaves over \(\operatorname{Spec} O_F\). Recall that hermitian vector sheaves over \(\operatorname{Spec} O_F\) are \(O_F\)-lattices in \((\mathbb{R}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2})^r\) in the language of Arakelov theory: Say, corresponding \(O_F\)-lattices are induced from their \(H^0\) via the natural embedding \(F' \hookrightarrow (\mathbb{R}^{r_1} \times \mathbb{C}^{r_2})^r\) where \(r_1\) (resp. \(r_2\)) denotes the real (resp. complex) embeddings of \(F\).

12 Algebraic Characterization

12.1 A GIT Principle

In Geometric Invariant Theory ([M], [Kem], [RR]), a fundamental principle, the Micro-Global Principle, claims that if a point is not GIT stable then there exists a parabolic subgroup which destroys the corresponding stability.

In the setting of \(O_F\)-lattices, even we do not have a proper definition of GIT stability for lattices, in terms of intersection stability, an analogue of the Micro-Global Principle does hold.

12.2 Micro-Global Relation for Geo-Ari Truncations

Let \(\Lambda = \Lambda^g\) be a rank \(r\) lattice associated to \(g \in \operatorname{GL}_r(\mathbb{A})\) and \(P\) a parabolic subgroup. Denote the sublattices filtration associated to \(P\) by

\[
0 = \Lambda_0 \subset \Lambda_1 \subset \Lambda_2 \subset \cdots \subset \Lambda_{|P|} = \Lambda.
\]
Assume that $P$ corresponds to the partition $I = (d_1, d_2, \cdots, d_n=|P|)$. Consequently, we have

$$\text{rk}(\Lambda_i) = r_i := d_1 + d_2 + \cdots + d_i, \quad \text{for } i = 1, 2, \cdots, |P|.$$  

Let $p, q : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$ be two polygons such that $p(0) = q(0) = p(r) = q(r) = 0$. Then following Lafforgue, we say $q$ is bigger than $p$ with respect to $P$ and denote it by $q \succ_P p$, if $q(r_i) - p(r_i) > 0$ for all $i = 1, \cdots, |P| - 1$. Introduce also the characteristic function $1(p \leq p)$ by

$$1(p \leq p) = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } p \leq p; \\ 0, & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Recall that for a parabolic subgroup $P$, $p_g^P$ denotes the polygon induced by $P$ for (the lattice corresponding to) the element $g \in G(A)$.

**Fundamental Relation.** (Lafforgue, Weng) Let $p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$ be a fixed convex polygon such that $p(0) = p(r) = 0$. Then we have

$$1(p \leq p) = \sum_{P : \text{stand para}} (-1)^{|P|-1} \sum_{\delta \in \mathcal{P}(F) \backslash G(F)} 1(p_{\delta g}^P \succ_P p) \quad \forall g \in G(A).$$
Chapter VI. Analytic Characterization of Stability

13 Arthur’s Analytic Truncation

13.1 Parabolic Subgroups

Let \( F \) be a number field with \( \mathbb{A} = \mathbb{A}_F \) the ring of adeles. Let \( G \) be a connected reductive group defined over \( F \). Recall that a subgroup \( P \) of \( G \) is called parabolic if \( G/P \) is a complete algebraic variety. Fix a minimal \( F \)-parabolic subgroup \( P_0 \) of \( G \) with its unipotent radical \( N_0 \), and fix a \( F \)-Levi subgroup \( M_0 = M_{P_0} \) of \( P_0 \) so as to have a Levi decomposition \( P_0 = M_0N_0 \). An \( F \)-parabolic subgroup \( P \) is called standard if it contains \( P_0 \). For such a parabolic subgroup \( P \), there exists a unique Levi subgroup \( M = M_P \) containing \( M_0 \) which we call the standard Levi subgroup of \( P \). Let \( N = N_P \) be the unipotent radical. Let us agree to use the term parabolic subgroups and Levi subgroups to denote standard \( F \)-parabolic subgroups and standard Levi subgroups respectively, unless otherwise is stated.

Let \( P \) be a parabolic subgroup of \( G \). Write \( T_P \) for the maximal split torus in the center of \( M_P \) and \( T'_P \) for the maximal quotient split torus of \( M_P \). Set \( \tilde{a}_P := X_*(T_P) \otimes \mathbb{R} \) and denote its real dimension by \( d(P) \), where \( X_*(T) \) is the lattice of 1-parameter subgroups in the torus \( T \). Then it is known that \( \tilde{a}_P = X_*(T'_P) \otimes \mathbb{R} \) as well. The two descriptions of \( \tilde{a}_P \) show that if \( Q \subset P \) is a parabolic subgroup, then there is a canonical injection \( \tilde{a}_P \hookrightarrow \tilde{a}_Q \) and a natural surjection \( \tilde{a}_Q \twoheadrightarrow \tilde{a}_P \). We thus obtain a canonical decomposition \( \tilde{a}_Q = \tilde{a}_Q^0 \oplus \tilde{a}_Q^p \) for a certain subspace \( \tilde{a}_Q^0 \) of \( \tilde{a}_Q \). In particular, \( \tilde{a}_G \) is a summand of \( \tilde{a} = \tilde{a}_P \) for all \( P \). Set \( a_P := \tilde{a}_P/\tilde{a}_G \) and \( a_Q^p := \tilde{a}_Q^p/\tilde{a}_G \). Then we have

\[ a_Q = a_Q^0 \oplus a_Q^p \]

and \( a_P \) is canonically identified as a subspace of \( a_Q \). Set \( a_0 := a_{P_0} \) and \( a_Q^p = a_{P_0}^p \) then we also have \( a_0 = a_0^0 \oplus a_P \) for all \( P \).

13.2 Logarithmic Map

For a real vector space \( V \), write \( V^\ast \) its dual space over \( \mathbb{R} \). Then dually we have the spaces \( a^\ast_Q, a^\ast_P, (a_Q^p)^\ast \) and hence the decompositions

\[ a_0^\ast = (a_Q^0)^\ast \oplus (a_Q^p)^\ast \oplus a^\ast_P. \]

In particular, \( a^\ast_P = X(M_P) \otimes \mathbb{R} \) with \( X(M_P) := \text{Hom}_F(M_P, GL(1)) \) i.e., collection of characters on \( M_P \). It is known that \( a^\ast_P = X(A_P) \otimes \mathbb{R} \) where \( A_P \) denotes the split component of the center of \( M_P \). Clearly, if \( Q \subset P \), then \( M_Q \subset M_P \) while \( A_Q \subset A_P \). Thus via restriction, the above two expressions of \( a^\ast_P \) also naturally induce an injection \( a^\ast_Q \hookrightarrow a^\ast_P \) and a surjection \( a^\ast_Q \twoheadrightarrow a^\ast_P \), compatible with the decomposition \( a^\ast_Q = (a^\ast_Q^0)^\ast \oplus a^\ast_Q^p \).

Every \( \chi = \sum \alpha \chi_i \) in \( a^\ast_P \) determines a morphism \( P(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C}^\ast \) by \( p \mapsto p^\chi := \prod |\chi_i(p)|^{\alpha_i} \). Consequently, we have a natural logarithmic map \( H_P : P(\mathbb{A}) \to a_P \) defined by

\[ \langle H_P(p), \chi \rangle = p^\chi, \quad \forall \chi \in a^\ast_P. \]
The kernel of $H_P$ is denoted by $P(\hat{A})^1$ and we set $M_P(\hat{A})^1 := P(\hat{A})^1 \cap M_P(\hat{A})$.

Let also $A_+$ be the set of $a \in A_P(\hat{A})$ such that

(1) $\alpha_v = 1$ for all finite places $v$ of $F$; and

(2) $\chi(a_v)$ is a positive number independent of infinite places $\sigma$ of $F$ for all $\chi \in X(M_P)$.

Then $M(\hat{A}) = A_+ \cdot M(\hat{A})^1$.

### 13.3 Roots, Coroots, Weights and Coweights

We now introduce standard bases for above spaces and their duals. Let $\Delta_0$ and $\tilde{\Delta}_0$ be the subsets of simple roots and simple weights in $\alpha_0^\vee$ respectively. (Recall that elements of $\tilde{\Delta}_0$ are non-negative linear combinations of elements in $\Delta_0$.) Write $\Delta_0^\vee$ (resp. $\tilde{\Delta}_0^\vee$) for the basis of $\alpha_0$ dual to $\Delta_0$ (resp. $\tilde{\Delta}_0$). Being the dual of the collection of simple weights (resp. of simple roots), $\Delta_0^\vee$ (resp. $\tilde{\Delta}_0^\vee$) is the set of coroots (resp. coweights).

For every $P$, let $\Delta_P \subset \alpha_0^\vee$ be the set of non-trivial restrictions of elements of $\Delta_0$ to $\alpha_P$. Denote the dual basis of $\Delta_P$ by $\tilde{\Delta}_P^\vee$. For each $\alpha \in \Delta_P$, let $\alpha^\vee$ be the projection of $\beta^\vee$ to $\alpha_P$, where $\beta$ is the root in $\Delta_0$ whose restriction to $\alpha_P$ is $\alpha$. Set $\Delta_P^\vee := \{\alpha^\vee : \alpha \in \Delta_P\}$, and define the dual basis of $\Delta_{Q_P}^\vee$ by $\tilde{\Delta}_P^\vee$.

More generally, if $Q \subset P$, write $\Delta_Q^\vee$ to denote the subset $\alpha \in \Delta_Q$ appearing in the action of $T_Q$ in the unipotent radical of $Q \cap M_P$. (Indeed, $M_P \cap Q$ is a parabolic subgroup of $M_P$ with nilpotent radical $N_Q^P := N_Q \cap M_P$. Thus $\Delta_Q^\vee$ is simply the set of roots of the parabolic subgroup $(M_P \cap Q, A_Q)$. And one checks that the map $P \mapsto \Delta_Q^\vee$ gives a natural bijection between parabolic subgroups $P$ containing $Q$ and subsets of $\Delta_Q$.) Then $\alpha_P$ is the subspace of $\alpha_Q$ annihilated by $\Delta_Q^\vee$. Denote by $(\Delta_Q^\vee)^\vee$ the dual of $\Delta_Q^\vee$. Let $(\Delta_Q^\vee)^\vee := \{\alpha^\vee : \alpha \in \Delta_Q^\vee\}$ and denote by $\tilde{\Delta}_Q^\vee$ the dual of $(\Delta_Q^\vee)^\vee$.

### 13.4 Positive Cone and Positive Chamber

Let $Q \subset P$ be two parabolic subgroups of $G$. We extend the linear functionals in $\Delta_Q^\vee$ and $\tilde{\Delta}_Q^\vee$ to elements of the dual space $\alpha_0^\vee$ by means of the canonical projection from $\alpha_0$ to $\alpha_Q^\vee$. Then $\alpha_P$ is given by the decomposition $\alpha_0 = \alpha_0^Q \oplus \alpha_Q^P \oplus \alpha_P$. Let $\tau_Q^P$ be the characteristic function of the positive chamber

$$\{H \in \alpha_0 : \langle \alpha, H \rangle > 0 \text{ for all } \alpha \in \Delta_Q^\vee\}$$

$$= \alpha_0^Q \oplus \{H \in \alpha_P^Q : \langle \alpha, H \rangle > 0 \text{ for all } \alpha \in \Delta_P^\vee\} \oplus \alpha_P$$

and let $\tau_P^Q$ be the characteristic function of the positive cone

$$\{H \in \alpha_0 : \langle \sigma, H \rangle > 0 \text{ for all } \sigma \in \Delta_Q^\vee\}$$

$$= \alpha_0^Q \oplus \{H \in \alpha_P^Q : \langle \sigma, H \rangle > 0 \text{ for all } \sigma \in \Delta_P^\vee\} \oplus \alpha_P.$$

Note that elements in $\Delta_Q^\vee$ are non-negative linear combinations of elements in $\Delta_P^\vee$. we have

$$\tau_Q^P \geq \tau_P^Q.$$
13.5 Partial Truncation and First Estimations

Denote $\tau^G_P$ and $\hat{\tau}^G_P$ simply by $\tau_P$ and $\hat{\tau}_P$.

**Basic Estimation.** (Arthur) Suppose that we are given a parabolic subgroup $P$, and a Euclidean norm $\|\cdot\|$ on $a_P$. Then there are constants $c$ and $N$ such that for all $x \in G(\mathbb{A})^1$ and $X \in a_P$,

$$\sum_{\delta \in P(F) \backslash G(F)} \hat{\tau}_P(H(\delta x) - X) \leq c(\|x\|e^{\|X\|})^N.$$ 

Moreover, the sum is finite.

As a direct consequence, we have the following

**Corollary.** ([Ar2,3]) Suppose that $T \in a_0$ and $N \geq 0$. Then there exist constants $c'$ and $N'$ such that for any function $\phi$ on $P(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})^1$, and $x, y \in G(\mathbb{A})^1$,

$$\sum_{\delta \in P(F) \backslash G(F)} |\phi(\delta x)| \cdot \hat{\tau}_P(H(\delta x) - H(y) - X)$$

is bounded by

$$c'\|x\|^{N'} \cdot \|y\|^{N'} \cdot \sup_{u \in G(\mathbb{A})^1} (|\phi(u)| \cdot \|u\|^{-N}).$$

14 Reduction Theory

14.1 Langlands’ Combinatorial Lemma

If $P_1 \subset P_2$, following Arthur [Ar2], set

$$\sigma_1^2(H) := \sigma^P_{P_1} := \sum_{P_1 \subset P_2 \subset P} (-1)^{\dim(A_1/A_2)} \tau^3_1(H) \cdot \hat{\tau}_3(H),$$

for $H \in a_0$. Then we have

**Lemma 1.** ([Ar2]) If $P_1 \subset P_2$, $\sigma_1^2$ is a characteristic function of the subset of $H \in a_1$ such that

(i) $\alpha(H) > 0$ for all $\alpha \in \Delta_1^2$;
(ii) $\sigma(H) \leq 0$ for all $\sigma \in \Delta_1 \setminus \Delta_2^2$; and
(iii) $\sigma(H) > 0$ for all $\sigma \in \Delta_2$.

As a special case, with $P_1 = P_2$, we get the following important consequence:

**Langlands’ Combinatorial Lemma.** If $Q \subset P$ are parabolic subgroups, then for all $H \in a_0$,

$$\sum_{R: Q \subset R \subset P} (-1)^{\dim(A_2/A_1)} \tau^P_R(H) \hat{\tau}_P^R(H) = \delta_{QP};$$

$$\sum_{R: Q \subset R \subset P} (-1)^{\dim(A_1/A_0)} \tau^P_R(H) \tau^P_R(H) = \delta_{QP}.$$
Suppose now that $Q \subset P$ are parabolic subgroups. Fix a vector $\Lambda \in a_0^\ast$. Let
\[
\varepsilon^P_Q(\Lambda) := (-1)^{\#(\alpha \in \Delta_0^P : \Lambda(\alpha^\vee) \leq 0)},
\]
and let
\[
\phi^P_Q(\Lambda, H), \quad H \in a_0,
\]
be the characteristic function of the set
\[
\{H \in a_0 : \sigma(H) > 0, \quad \text{if } \Lambda(\alpha^\vee) \leq 0 \quad \text{and } \sigma(H) \leq 0, \quad \text{if } \Lambda(\alpha^\vee) > 0 \quad \forall \alpha \in \Delta_0^P\}.
\]

**Lemma 2. ([Ar2.3])** With the same notation as above,
\[
\sum_{R : Q \subset R \subset P} \varepsilon^R_Q(\Lambda) \cdot \phi^R_Q(\Lambda, H) \cdot \tau^P_R(H) = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } \Lambda(\alpha^\vee) \leq 0, \quad \exists \alpha \in \Delta_0^P \\ 1, & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}
\]

### 14.2 Langlands-Arthur’s Partition: Reduction Theory

Our aim here is to derive Langlands-Arthur’s partition of $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$ into disjoint subsets, one for each (standard) parabolic subgroup.

To start with, suppose that $\omega$ is a compact subset of $N_0(\mathbb{A})M_0(\mathbb{A})$ and that $T_0 \in -a_0^\ast$. For any parabolic subgroup $P_1$, introduce the associated Siegel set $s^{P_1}(T_0, \omega)$ as the collection of
\[
pak, \quad p \in \omega, \quad a \in A_0(\mathbb{R})^0, \quad k \in K,
\]
where $\alpha(H_0(a) - T_0)$ is positive for each $\alpha \in \Delta_0^P$. Then from classical reduction theory, we conclude that for sufficiently big $\omega$ and sufficiently small $T_0$, $G(\mathbb{A}) = P_1(F) \cdot s^{P_1}(T_0, \omega)$.

Suppose now that $P_1$ is given. Let $s^{P_1}(T_0, T, \omega)$ be the set of $x$ in $s^{P_1}(T_0, \omega)$ such that $\sigma(H_0(x) - T) \leq 0$ for each $\sigma \in \hat{A}_0$. Let $F^{P_1}(x, T) := F_1(x, T)$ be the characteristic function of the set of $x \in G(\mathbb{A})$ such that $\delta x$ belongs to $s^{P_1}(T_0, T, \omega)$ for some $\delta \in P_1(F)$.

As such, $F_1(x, T)$ is left $A_1(\mathbb{R})^0N_1(\mathbb{A})M_1(F)$-invariant, and can be regarded as the characteristic function of the projection of $s^{P_1}(T_0, T, \omega)$ onto $A_1(\mathbb{R})^0N_1(\mathbb{A})M_1(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$, a compact subset of the quotient space $A_1(\mathbb{R})^0N_1(\mathbb{A})M_1(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$.

For example, $F(x, T) := F^G(x, T)$ admits the following more direct description which will play a key role in our study of Arthur’s periods:

If $P_1 \subset P_2$ are (standard) parabolic subgroups, we write $A_1^\ast := A^\ast_{P_1}$ for $A_{P_1}(\mathbb{A})^0$, the identity component of $A_{P_1}(\mathbb{R})$, and
\[
A_{1,2}^\ast := A^\ast_{P_1} \cap M_{P_2}(\mathbb{A})^1.
\]

Then the logarithmic map $H_{P_1}$ maps $A_{1,2}^\ast$ isomorphically onto $a_2^\ast$, the orthogonal complement of $a_2$ in $a_1$. If $T_0$ and $T$ are points in $a_0$, set $A_{1,2}^\ast(T_0, T)$ to be the set
\[
\{a \in A_{1,2}^\ast : a(H_1(a) - T) > 0, \quad a \in \Delta_1^2; \quad \sigma(H_1(a) - T) < 0, \quad \sigma \in \hat{A}_1^2\},
\]
where $\Delta^2_1 := \Delta_{P_1 \cap M_2}$ and $\tilde{\Delta}^2_1 := \tilde{\Delta}_{P_1 \cap M_2}$. In particular, for $T_0$ such that $-T_0$ is suitably regular, $F(x, T)$ is the characteristic function of the compact subset of $G(F) \backslash G(A)^1$ obtained by projecting

$$N_0(A) \cdot M_0(A)^1 \cdot A_{P_0, G}^0(T_0, T) \cdot K$$

onto $G(F) \backslash G(A)^1$.

All in all, we arrive at the following

**Arthur’s Partition.** (Arthur) Fix $P$ and let $T$ be any suitably point in $T_0 + a_0$. Then

$$\sum_{P_1 \supset P \subset P} \sum_{\delta \in \mathcal{P} \backslash G(F)} \delta \cdot \tau_{P_1}^F(H_0(\delta x) - T) = 1 \quad \forall x \in G(A).$$

## 15 Arthur’s Analytic Truncation

### 15.1 Definition

Following Arthur, we make the following

**Definition.** (Arthur) Fix a suitably regular point $T \in a_0^+$. If $\phi$ is a continuous function on $G(F) \backslash G(A)^1$, define Arthur’s analytic truncation $(\Lambda^T \phi)(x)$ to be the function

$$(\Lambda^T \phi)(x) := \sum P (-1)^{\dim(A/Z)} \sum_{\delta \in \mathcal{P} \backslash G(F)} \phi_{P}(\delta x) \cdot \tilde{\tau}_{P}(H(\delta x) - T),$$

where

$$\phi_{P}(x) := \int_{N(F) \backslash N(A)} \phi(nx) \, dn$$

denotes the constant term of $\phi$ along $P$, and the sum is over all (standard) parabolic subgroups.

The main purpose for introducing analytic truncation is to give a natural way to construct integrable functions: even from the example of $GL_2$, we know that automorphic forms are generally not integrable over the total fundamental domain $G(F) \backslash G(A)^1$ mainly due to the fact that in the Fourier expansions of such functions, constant terms are only of moderate growth (hence not integrable). Thus in order to naturally obtain integrable functions, we should truncate the original function along the cuspidal regions by removing constant terms. Simply put, Arthur’s analytic truncation is a well-designed device in which constant terms are tackled in such a way that different levels of parabolic subgroups are suitably counted at the corresponding cuspidal region so that the whole truncation will not be overdone while there will be no parabolic subgroups left untackled.

Note that all parabolic subgroups of $G$ can be obtained from standard parabolic subgroups by taking conjugations with elements from $P(F) \backslash G(F)$. So we have:

(a) $$(\Lambda^T \phi)(x) = \sum_{P} (-1)^{\dim(A/Z)} \phi_{P}(x) \cdot \tilde{\tau}_{P}(H(x) - T),$$ where the sum is over all, both standard and non-standard, parabolic subgroups;
(b) If $\phi$ is a cusp form, then $\Lambda^T \phi = \phi$;

This is because by definition, all constant terms along proper $P : P \neq G$ are zero. Moreover, as a direct consequence of the Basic Estimation for partial truncation, we have

(c) If $\phi$ is of moderate growth in the sense that there exist some constants $C, N$ such that $|\phi(x)| \leq c||x||^N$ for all $x \in G(\mathbb{A})$, then so is $\Lambda^T \phi$.

15.2 Basic Properties

Recall that an element $T \in a_0^n$ is called sufficiently regular, if for any $\alpha \in \Delta_0$, $\alpha(T) \gg 0$. Fundamental properties of Arthur’s analytic truncation may be summarized as follows:

**Proposition.** (Arthur) For sufficiently regular $T$ in $a_0$.

1. Let $\phi : G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be a locally $L^1$ function. Then
   \[ \Lambda^T \Lambda^T \phi(g) = \Lambda^T \phi(g) \]
   for almost all $g$. If $\phi$ is also locally bounded, then the above is true for all $g$.

2. Let $\phi_1$, $\phi_2$ be two locally $L^1$ functions on $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$. Suppose that $\phi_1$ is of moderate growth and $\phi_2$ is rapidly decreasing. Then
   \[ \int_{Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})} \overline{\Lambda^T \phi_1(g)} \cdot \phi_2(g) \, dg = \int_{Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})} \overline{\phi_1(g)} \cdot \Lambda^T \phi_2(g) \, dg; \]

3. Let $K_f$ be an open compact subgroup of $G(\mathbb{A}_f)$, and $r, r'$ are two positive real numbers. Then there exists a finite subset $\{X_i : i = 1, 2, \ldots, N\} \subset u$, the universal enveloping algebra of the Lie algebra associated to $G(\mathbb{A}_0)$, such that the following is satisfied: Let $\phi$ be a smooth function on $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$, right invariant under $K_f$ and let $a \in \Lambda_{G(\mathbb{A})}$, $g \in G(\mathbb{A})^1 \cap S$. Then
   \[ \left| \Lambda^T \phi(ag) \right| \leq \|g\|^{-r} \sum_{i=1}^{N} \sup \left\{ |\delta(X_i)\phi(ag')| \|g'\|^{-r'} : g' \in G(\mathbb{A})^1 \right\}, \]
   where $S$ is a Siegel domain with respect to $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$.

15.3 Truncation $\Lambda^T 1$

To go further, let us give a much more detailed study of Arthur’s analytic truncation for the constant function $1$. Fix a sufficiently regular $T \in a_0$. Introduce the truncated subset $\Sigma(T) := \left(Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})\right)_T$ of the space $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})^1$ by

\[ \Sigma(T) := \left(Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})\right)_T := \left\{ g \in Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}) : \Lambda^T 1(g) = 1 \right\}. \]

We claim that $\Sigma(T)$ or the same $\left(Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})\right)_T$, is compact. In fact, much stronger result is correct. Namely, we have the following
Lemma. (Arthur) For sufficiently regular $T \in \mathfrak{a}_0^+$, $\Lambda^T 1(x) = F(x, T)$. That is to say, $\Lambda^T 1$ is the characteristic function of the compact set $\Sigma(T)$ of $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$ obtained by projecting $N_0(\mathbb{A}) \cdot M_0(\mathbb{A}) \cdot A_{\mathfrak{o}_0}^\infty(T_0, T) \cdot K$ onto $G(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})$.

16 Analytic Characterization of Stability

16.1 A Micro Bridge

For simplicity, we in this subsection work only with the field of rationals $\mathbb{Q}$ and use mixed languages of adeles and lattices. Also, without loss of generality, we assume that $\mathbb{Z}$-lattices are of volume one. Accordingly, set $G = SL_r$.

For a rank $r$ lattice $\Lambda$ of volume one, denote the sublattices filtration associated to a parabolic subgroup $P$ by

$$0 = \Lambda_0 \subset \Lambda_1 \subset \Lambda_2 \subset \cdots \subset \Lambda_{|P|} = \Lambda.$$ 

Assume that $P$ corresponds to the partition $I = (d_1, d_2, \cdots, d_{|P|})$. A polygon $p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$ is called normalized if $p(0) = p(r) = 0$. For a (normalized) polygon $p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$, define the associated (real) character $\alpha(T) = \log \prod_{i=1}^r g_{d_i}$, for all $i = 1, 2, \cdots, r - 1$. Then one checks that $T(p)$ coincides with

$$\left(p(1), p(2) - p(1), \cdots, p(i) - p(i - 1), \cdots, p(r - 1) - p(r - 2), -p(r - 1)\right).$$

Now take $g = g(\Lambda) \in G(\mathbb{A})$. Denote its lattice by $\Lambda^g$, and its induced filtration from $P$ by

$$0 = \Lambda_0^g \subset \Lambda_1^g \subset \cdots \subset \Lambda_{|P|}^g = \Lambda^g.$$ 

Consequently, the polygon $p_r^g = p_r^{\Lambda^g} : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$ is characterized by

1. $p_r^g(0) = p_r^g(r) = 0$;
2. $p_r^g$ is affine on $[r_i, r_{i+1}]$, $i = 1, 2, \cdots, |P| - 1$; and
3. $p_r^g(r_i) = \deg(\Lambda_{r_i}^g) - r_i \cdot \deg(\Lambda^g)$, $i = 1, 2, \cdots, |P| - 1$.

Note that the volume of $\Lambda$ is assumed to be one, therefore (3) is equivalent to (3') $p_r^g(r_i) = \deg(\Lambda_{r_i}^g)$, $i = 1, 2, \cdots, |P| - 1$.

The advantage of partially using adelic language is that the values of $p_r^g$ may be written down precisely. Indeed, using Langlands decomposition $g = n \cdot m \cdot a(g) \cdot k$ with $n \in N_r(\mathbb{A})$, $m \in M_r(\mathbb{A})$, $a \in A_+$ and $k \in K = \prod_{p} SL(O_{d_p}) \times SO(r)$. Write

$$a = a(g) = \text{diag}(a_1 I_{d_1}, a_2 I_{d_2}, \cdots, a_{|P|} I_{d_{|P|}})$$

where $r = d_1 + d_2 + \cdots + d_{|P|}$ is the partition corresponding to $P$. Then it is a standard fact that

$$\deg(\Lambda_{r_i}^g) = -\log \left(\prod_{j=1}^i d_{j_i}^{d_j}\right) = -\sum_{j=1}^i d_j \log a_j, \quad i = 1, \cdots, |P|.$$
Set now $1(p^*_P >_P p)$ to be the characteristic function of the subset of $g$’s such that $p^*_P >_P p$. Then by a certain calculation, we obtain the following

**Micro Bridge.** (Lafforgue, Weng) For a fixed convex normalized polygon $p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$, and $g \in S_L(A)$, with respect to any parabolic subgroup $P$, we have

$$\hat{T}_P(-H_0(g) - T(p)) = 1(p^*_P >_P p).$$

### 16.2 Analytic Truncations and Stability

With the micro bridge above, now we are ready to state the following analytic characterization of stability.

**Global Bridge.** (Lafforgue, Weng) For a fixed normalized convex polygon $p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R}$, let $T(p) \in a_0$ be the associated vector defined by

$$(p(1), p(2) - p(1), \cdots, p(i) - p(i-1), \cdots, p(r-1) - p(r-2), -p(r-1)).$$

If $T(p)$ is sufficiently positive, then

$$1(\overline{p^*} \leq p) = \left(\Lambda^{T(p)}1\right)(g).$$
Chapter VII. Non-Abelian \( L \)-Functions

17 High Rank Zetas and Eisenstein Series

17.1 Epstein Zeta Functions and High Rank Zetas

Recall that the rank \( r \) non-abelian zeta function \( \xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) \) of \( \mathbb{Q} \) is given by

\[
\xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) = \int_{\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}} \cup \partial \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}}} \left( \sum_{\lambda \in \Lambda} e^{-(s,\lambda)} \right) \cdot \mu(\lambda) d\mu(\lambda), \quad \Re(s) > 1,
\]

with \( e^{h(Q,\Lambda)} := \sum_{x \in A} \exp \left( -\pi |x|^2 \right) \) and \( \deg(\Lambda) = -\log \text{Vol}(\mathbb{R}^r / \Lambda) \).

Decompose according to their volumes to get \( \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r} = \bigcup_{T > 0} \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[T] \). Using the natural morphism \( \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[T] \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1], \Lambda \mapsto T^{1/\lambda} \cdot \Lambda \), we obtain

\[
\xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) = \int_{\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]} \left( \sum_{\lambda \in \Lambda} e^{-(s,\lambda)} \right) \cdot \mu(\Lambda) d\mu(\Lambda) = \int_0^\infty T \frac{dT}{T} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]} \left( e^{h(Q,T^{1/\lambda} \cdot \Lambda) - 1} \right) \cdot \mu(\Lambda).
\]

But

\[
h(Q,T^{1/\lambda} \cdot \Lambda) = \log \left( \sum_{\lambda \in \Lambda} e^{\left( -\pi |x|^2 \cdot T^{1/2} \right)} \right)
\]

and

\[
\int_0^\infty e^{-A T^{1/2}} T^{1/2} \frac{dT}{T} = \frac{1}{B} \cdot A^{-1/2} \cdot \Gamma\left( \frac{1}{B} \right), \quad B \neq 0,
\]

we have \( \xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) = \frac{\pi^{-1/2} \cdot \Gamma\left( \frac{1}{2} \right)}{2} \cdot \int_{\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]} \left( \sum_{x \in \Lambda[0]} |x|^{-s} \right) \cdot \mu_1(\Lambda) \). Accordingly, introduce the completed Epstein zeta function for \( \Lambda \) by

\[
\hat{E}(\Lambda; s) := \pi^{-1} \Gamma(\frac{s}{2}) \cdot \sum_{x \in \Lambda[0]} |x|^{-2s}.
\]

Proposition. (Weng) (Eisenstein Series and High Rank Zetas)

\[
\xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) = \frac{r}{2} \int_{\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]} \hat{E}(\Lambda; s) \cdot \mu_1(\Lambda).
\]

17.2 Rankin-Selberg Method: An Example with \( SL_2 \)

Consider the action of \( SL(2,\mathbb{Z}) \) on the upper half plane \( \mathcal{H} \). Then a standard ‘fundamental domain’ is given by \( D = \{ z = x + iy \in \mathcal{H} : |x| \leq \frac{1}{2}, y > 0, x^2 + y^2 \geq 1 \} \). Recall also the completed standard Eisenstein series

\[
\hat{E}(z; s) := \pi^{-1} \Gamma(\frac{s}{2}) \cdot \sum_{(m,n) \in \mathbb{Z}^2 \backslash \{(0,0)\}} \frac{|y|^s}{m^2 + n^2}.
\]
Naturally, we are led to the integral \( \int_D \hat{E}(z, s) \frac{dx dy}{y^2} \). However, this integration diverges. Indeed, near the only cusp \( y = \infty \), \( \hat{E}(z, s) \) has the Fourier expansion

\[
\hat{E}(z; s) = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} a_n(y, s) e^{2\pi i n x}
\]

with

\[
a_n(y, s) = \begin{cases} 
\xi(2s)y^n + \xi(2 - 2s)y^{1-s}, & \text{if } n = 0; \\
2|n|^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sigma_{1-2s}(n) \sqrt{K_{\frac{1}{2}}}(2\pi|n|y), & \text{if } n \neq 0,
\end{cases}
\]

where \( \xi(s) \) is the completed Riemann zeta function, \( \sigma_s(n) := \sum_{d \mid n} d^s \), and \( K_s(y) := \frac{1}{2} \int_0^\infty e^{-y(t+\frac{1}{t})} \frac{dt}{t} \) is the K-Bessel function. Moreover,

\[
|K_s(y)| \leq e^{-y/2} K_{Re(s)}(2), \quad \text{if } y > 4, \quad \text{and} \quad K_s = K_{-s}.
\]

So \( a_n(y, s) \) decay exponentially, and the problematic term comes from \( a_0(y, s) \), which is of slow growth.

Therefore, to make the original integration meaningful, we need to cut-off the slow growth part. Recall from the discussions in previous three chapters, we have two different ways to do so: one is geometric and hence rather direct and simple; while the other is analytic, and hence rather technical and traditional, dated back to Rankin-Selberg.

(a) **Geometric Truncation**

Draw a horizontal line \( y = T \geq 1 \) and set

\[
D_T = \{ z = x + iy \in D : y \leq T \}, \quad D^T = \{ z = x + iy \in D : y \geq T \}.
\]

Then \( D = D_T \cup D^T \). Introduce a well-defined integration

\[
I_{T Geo}^T(s) := \int_{D_T} \hat{E}(z, s) \frac{dx dy}{y^2}.
\]

(b) **Analytic Truncation**

Define a truncated Eisenstein series \( \hat{E}_T(z; s) \) by

\[
\hat{E}_T(z; s) := \begin{cases} 
\hat{E}(z; s), & \text{if } y \leq T; \\
\hat{E}(z, s) - a_0(y; s), & \text{if } y > T.
\end{cases}
\]

Introduce a well-defined integration

\[
I_{T Ana}^T(s) := \int_D \hat{E}_T(z; s) \frac{dx dy}{y^2}.
\]

With this, from the Rankin-Selberg method, one checks that we have the following:

**Proposition.** ([W2,3,5]) *Analytic Truncation=Geometric Truncation in Rank Two*

\[
I_{T Geo}^T(s) = \xi(2s) \frac{T^{s-1}}{s-1} - \xi(2s-1) \frac{T^{-s}}{s} = I_{T Ana}^T(s).
\]
Each of the above two integrations has its own merit: for the geometric one, we keep the Eisenstein series unchanged, while for the analytic one, we keep the original fundamental domain of $\mathcal{H}$ under $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z})$ as it is.

Note that the nice point about the fundamental domain is that it admits a modular interpretation. Thus it would be very idealistic if we could at the same time keep the Eisenstein series unchanged, while offer some integration domains which appear naturally in certain moduli problems. Guided by this, in the follows, we will introduce non-abelian $L$-functions using integrations of Eisenstein series over generalized moduli spaces.

(c) Arithmetic Truncation

Now we explain why above discussion and Rankin-Selberg method have anything to do with our non-abelian zeta functions. For this, we introduce yet another truncation, the algebraic, or better arithmetic, one.

So back to the moduli space of rank 2 lattices of volume 1 over $\mathbb{Q}$. Then classical reduction theory gives a natural map from this moduli space to the fundamental domain $D$ of $\text{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z})$ on $\mathcal{H}$: For any lattice $\Lambda$, fix $x_1 \in \Lambda$ such that its length gives the first Minkowski minimum $\lambda_1$ of $\Lambda$ ([Min]). Then via rotation, we may assume that $x_1 = (\lambda_1, 0)$. Further, from the reduction theory $x_1^0 \Lambda$ may be viewed as the lattice of the volume $\lambda_1^{-2} = y_0$ which is generated by $(1, 0)$ and $\omega = x_0 + iy_0 \in D$. That is to say, the points in $D_T$ are in one-to-one corresponding to the rank two lattices of volume one whose first Minkowski minimum $\lambda_1^{-2} \leq T$, i.e., $\lambda_1 \geq T^{-\frac{1}{2}}$. Set $\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}, 2}^{0 \log T}[1]$ be the moduli space of rank 2 lattices $\Lambda$ of volume 1 over $\mathbb{Q}$ whose sublattices $\Lambda_1$ of rank 1 have degrees $\leq \frac{1}{2} \log T$. As a direct consequence, we have the following

**Proposition.** (Geometric Truncation = Algebraic Truncation) There is a natural one-to-one, onto morphism

$$\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}, 2}^{0 \log T}[1] \approx D_T.$$  

In particular,

$$\mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}, 2}^{0}[1] = \mathcal{M}_{\mathbb{Q}, 2}[1] \approx D_1.$$ 

Consequently, we have the following

**Example in Rank 2.** $\xi_{\mathbb{Q}, 2}(s) = \frac{\xi(2s)}{s-1} - \frac{\xi(2s-1)}{s}.$

18 Non-Abelian $L$-Functions: Definitions

18.1 Automorphic Forms and Eisenstein Series

To facilitate our ensuing discussion, we make the following preparations. Here, as usual, instead of parabolic subgroups $P$, we adopt their Levi subgroups $M$ as running symbols. For details, see e.g., [MW] and [W-1].

Fix a connected reduction group $G$ defined over $F$, denote by $Z_G$ its center. Fix a minimal parabolic subgroup $P_0$ of $G$. Then $P_0 = M_0 N_0$, where as usual we fix once
and for all the Levi $M_0$ and the unipotent radical $N_0$. Recall that a parabolic subgroup $P$ is $G$ is called standard if $P \supset P_0$. For such groups, write $P = MN$ with $M_0 \subset M$ the standard Levi and $N$ the unipotent radical. Denote by $\text{Rat}(M)$ the group of rational characters of $M$, i.e., the morphism $M \to \mathbb{G}_m$ where $\mathbb{G}_m$ denotes the multiplicative group. Set $\alpha^*_M := \text{Rat}(M) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C}$, $a_M := \text{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(\text{Rat}(M), \mathbb{C})$, and $\text{Re}a^*_M := \text{Rat}(M) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{R}$, $\text{Re}a_M := \text{Hom}_{\mathbb{Z}}(\text{Rat}(M), \mathbb{R})$. For any $\chi \in \text{Rat}(M)$, we obtain a (real) character $|\chi| : M(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{R}^*$ defined by $m = (m_v) \mapsto m^{|\chi|} := \prod_{v \in S} |m_v|_{v^{|\chi|}}$ with $|\cdot|$ the $v$-absolute values. Set then $M(\mathbb{A})^1 := \cap_{\chi \in \text{Rat}(M)} \text{Ker}(\chi)$, which is a normal subgroup of $M(\mathbb{A})$. Set $X_M$ to be the group of complex characters which are trivial on $M(\mathbb{A})^1$. Denote by $H_M := \log_{M_0} : M(\mathbb{A}) \to a_M$ the map such that $\forall \chi \in \text{Rat}(M) \subset a_M^*, \langle \chi, \log_M(m) \rangle := \log(m^{|\chi|})$. Clearly, $M(\mathbb{A})^1 = \ker(\log_{M_0})$, $\log_{M_0}(M(\mathbb{A}))/M(\mathbb{A})^1 \approx \text{Re}a_M$. Hence in particular there is a natural isomorphism $\kappa : a_M^* \approx X_M$. Set $\text{Re}X_M := \kappa(\text{Re}a_M^*)$. Moreover, define our working space $X_M^{(0)}$ to be the subgroup of $X_M$ consisting of complex characters of $M(\mathbb{A})/M(\mathbb{A})^1$ which are trivial on $Z_{G(\mathbb{A})}$.

Fix a maximal compact subgroup $K$ such that for all standard parabolic subgroups $P = MN$ as above, $P(\mathbb{A}) \cap K = M(\mathbb{A}) \cap K \cdot U(\mathbb{A}) \cap K$. Hence we get the Langlands decomposition $G(\mathbb{A}) = M(\mathbb{A}) \cdot N(\mathbb{A}) \cdot K$. Denote by $m_P : G(\mathbb{A}) \to M(\mathbb{A})/M(\mathbb{A})^1$ the map $g = m \cdot n \cdot k \mapsto M(\mathbb{A})^1 \cdot m$ where $g \in G(\mathbb{A})$, $m \in M(\mathbb{A})$, $n \in N(\mathbb{A})$ and $k \in K$.

Fix Haar measures on $M_0(\mathbb{A})$, $N_0(\mathbb{A})$, $K$ respectively such that the induced measure on $N_0(F)$ is the counting measure and the volumes of $N(F)\setminus N_0(\mathbb{A})$ and $K$ are all $1$.

Such measures then also induce Haar measures via $\log_{M_0}$ to $a_M^*$, $a_M^*$, etc. Furthermore, if we denote by $\rho_P$ the half of the sum of the positive roots of the maximal split torus $T_P$ of the central $Z_{M_0}$ of $M_0$, then $f \mapsto \int_{M_0(\mathbb{A}) \cap N_0(\mathbb{A}) \cdot K} f(mn) \, dk \, dm \, m^{-2\rho_P} \, dm$ defined for continuous functions with compact supports on $G(\mathbb{A})$ defines a Haar measure $dg$ on $G(\mathbb{A})$. This in turn gives measures on $M(\mathbb{A})$, $N(\mathbb{A})$ and hence on $a_M^*$, $a_M^*$, $P(\mathbb{A})$, etc, for all parabolic subgroups $P$. In particular, the following compatibility condition

$$\int_{M_0(\mathbb{A}) \cap N_0(\mathbb{A}) \cdot K} f(mn) \, dk \, dm \, m^{-2\rho_P} \, dm = \int_{M(\mathbb{A}) \cap N(\mathbb{A}) \cdot K} f(mn) \, dk \, dm \, m^{-2\rho_P} \, dm$$

holds for all continuous functions $f$ with compact supports on $G(\mathbb{A})$, where $\rho_P$ denotes the half of the sum of the positive roots of the maximal split torus $T_P$ of the central $Z_M$ of $M$. For later use, denote also by $\Delta_P$ the set of positive roots determined by $(P, T_P)$ and $\Delta_0 = \Delta_{P_0}$.

Fix an isomorphism $T_0 \approx \mathbb{G}_m^R$. Embed $\mathbb{R}^*_+ \mathbb{R}^R$ by $t \mapsto (1; t)$. Then we obtain a natural injection $(\mathbb{R}^*_+ \mathbb{R}^R) \to T_0(\mathbb{A})$ which splits. Denote by $A_{M(\mathbb{A})}$ the unique connected subgroup of $T_0(\mathbb{A})$ which projects onto $(\mathbb{R}^*_+ \mathbb{R}^R)$. More generally, for a standard parabolic subgroup $P = MN$, set $A_{M(\mathbb{A})} := A_{M(\mathbb{A})} \cap Z_{M(\mathbb{A})}$ where as used above $Z$, denotes the center of the group $\ast$. Clearly, $M(\mathbb{A}) = A_{M(\mathbb{A})} \cdot M(\mathbb{A})^1$. For later use, set also $A'_{M(\mathbb{A})} := \{ a \in A_{M(\mathbb{A})} : \log_G(a) = 0 \}$. Then $A_{M(\mathbb{A})} = A_{G(\mathbb{A})} \oplus A'_{M(\mathbb{A})}$.

Note that $K$, $M(F) \setminus M(\mathbb{A})^1$ and $N(F) \setminus N(\mathbb{A})$ are all compact, thus with the Langlands decomposition $G(\mathbb{A}) = N(\mathbb{A}) \cdot M(\mathbb{A}) \cdot K$ in mind, the reduction theory for $G(F) \setminus G(\mathbb{A})$ or more generally $P(F) \setminus G(\mathbb{A})$ is reduced to that for $A_{M(\mathbb{A})}$ since $Z_G(F) \setminus Z_{G(\mathbb{A})} \setminus Z_{G(\mathbb{A})} \cap$
there is a natural pairing \( \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : A_0(\mathfrak{h}_0)M(F)\backslash G(\mathfrak{h}_0) \times A(\mathfrak{h}_0)M(F)\backslash G(\mathfrak{h}_0) \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \)
defined by
\[ \langle \psi, \phi \rangle := \int_{M(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})} \psi(g) \overline{\phi(g)} \, dg. \]

Moreover, for a (complex) character \( \xi : Z_{M(\mathbb{A})} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^* \), set
\[ A(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\xi := \left\{ \phi \in A(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})) : \phi(zg) = \xi^p \cdot \xi(z) \cdot \phi(g), \forall z \in Z_{M(\mathbb{A})}, g \in G(\mathbb{A}) \right\}, \]
and \( A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\xi \) its subspace consisting of cusp forms.

Set now
\[ A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})) := \sum_{\xi \in \text{Hom}(Z_{M(\mathbb{A})}, \mathbb{C}^*)} A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\xi. \]

Then the natural morphism
\[ \mathbb{C}[\text{Re}_M] \otimes A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})) \rightarrow A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})) \]
\[ (Q, \phi) \mapsto (g \mapsto Q(\log_M(m_\mathcal{R}(g))) \cdot \phi(g)) \]
is an isomorphism.

Let \( \Pi_0(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi \) be isomorphism classes of irreducible representations of \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \) occurring in the space \( A_0(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi \), and
\[ \Pi_0(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A})) := \bigcup_{\xi \in \text{Hom}(Z_{M(\mathbb{A})}, \mathbb{C}^*)} \Pi_0(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi. \]
(In fact, we should use \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_f) \times (\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \cap K, \text{Lie}(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_\infty)) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}) \) instead of \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \).) For any \( \pi \in \Pi_0(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi \), set \( A_0(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\pi \) to be the isotypic component of type \( \pi \) of \( A_0(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi \), i.e., the set of cusp forms of \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \) generating a semi-simple isotypic \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_f) \times (\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \cap K, \text{Lie}(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_\infty)) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}) \)-module of type \( \pi \). Set
\[ A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\pi := \left\{ \phi \in A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A})) : \phi_k \in A_0(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\pi, \forall k \in K \right\}. \]

It is quite clear that
\[ A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\xi = \bigoplus_{\pi \in \Pi_0(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\xi} A_0(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{A})M(F) \backslash G(\mathbb{A}))_\pi. \]

More generally, let \( V \subset A(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A})) \) be an irreducible \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_f) \times (\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \cap K, \text{Lie}(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_\infty)) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}) \)-module with \( \pi_0 \) the induced representation of \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_f) \times (\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \cap K, \text{Lie}(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_\infty)) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}) \). Then we call \( \pi_0 \) an automorphic representation of \( \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \). Denote by \( A(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_\pi \) the isotypic subquotient module of type \( \pi_0 \) of \( A(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A})) \).

One checks that
\[ V \otimes \text{Hom}_{\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \times (\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}) \cap K, \text{Lie}(\mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}_\infty)) \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C})}(V, A(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))) \]
\[ \cong A(\mathbb{M}(F) \backslash \mathbb{M}(\mathbb{A}))_{\pi_0}. \]

49
Set
\[ A(N(A)M(F) \setminus G(A))_{\pi_0} := \left\{ \phi \in A(N(A)M(F) \setminus G(A)) : \right. \]
\[ \phi_k \in A(M(F) \setminus M(A))_0, \forall k \in K \right\}. \]

Moreover if \( A(M(F) \setminus M(A))_{\pi_0} \subset A_0(M(F) \setminus M(A)) \), we call \( \pi_0 \) cuspidal.

Automorphic representations \( \pi \) and \( \pi_0 \) of \( M(A) \) are said to be equivalent if \( \pi \simeq \pi_0 \otimes \lambda \) for some \( \lambda \in X_M^G \). This, in practice, means that \( A(M(F) \setminus M(A))_\pi = \lambda \cdot A(M(F) \setminus M(A))_{\pi_0} \).

Consequently,
\[ A(N(A)M(F) \setminus G(A))_{\pi} = (\lambda \circ m_F) \cdot A(N(A)M(F) \setminus G(A))_{\pi_0}. \]

Denote by \( \Psi := [\pi_0] \) the equivalence class of \( \pi_0 \). Then \( \Psi \) is an \( X_M^G \)-principal homogeneous space, hence admits a natural complex structure. Usually we call \( (M, \Psi) \) a cuspidal datum of \( G \) if \( \pi_0 \) is cuspidal. Also for \( \pi \in \Psi \) set \( \text{Re} \pi := \text{Re} \chi_\pi = [\chi_\pi] \in \text{Re} X_M \), where \( \chi_\pi \) is the central character of \( \pi \), and \( \text{Im} \pi := \pi \otimes (-\text{Re} \pi) \).

For \( \phi \in A(N(A)M(F) \setminus G(A))_{\pi} \) with \( \pi \) an irreducible automorphic representation of \( M(A) \), define the associated Eisenstein series \( E(\phi, \pi) : G(F) \setminus G(A) \to \mathbb{C} \) by
\[ E(\phi, \pi)(g) := \sum_{\delta \in \Delta_\phi(G)} \phi(\delta g). \]

Then there is an open cone \( C \subset \text{Re} X_M^G \) such that if \( \text{Re} \pi \in C \), \( E(\lambda \cdot \phi, \pi \otimes \lambda)(g) \) converges uniformly for \( g \) in a compact subset of \( G(A) \) and \( \lambda \) in an open neighborhood of 0 in \( X_M^G \).

For example, if \( \Psi = [\pi] \) is cuspidal, we may even take \( C \) to be the cone \( \{ \lambda \in \text{Re} X_M^G : \langle \lambda - \rho_F, \alpha^\vee \rangle > 0, \forall \alpha \in \Delta_\phi^G \} \). As a direct consequence, then \( E(\phi, \pi) \in A(G(F) \setminus G(A)) \) is an automorphic form.

### 18.2 Non-Abelian L-Functions

Being automorphic forms, Eisenstein series are of moderate growth. Consequently, they are not integrable over \( G(F) \setminus G(A)^1 \) in general. On the other hand, Eisenstein series are also smooth and hence integrable over compact subsets of \( G(F) \setminus G(A)^1 \). So it is very natural for us to search for compact domains which are intrinsically defined.

As such, let us now return to the group \( G = GL_r \). Then, we obtain compact moduli spaces
\[ M^{\rho,p}_F[\Delta_F^1] := \left\{ g \in GL_r(F) \setminus GL_r(A) : \deg g = 0, \bar{\rho}_g \leq p \right\} \]
for a fixed convex polygon \( p : [0, r] \to \mathbb{R} \). For example, \( M^{\rho,0}_F[1] = M_{\rho,0}[1] \), (the adelic inverse image of) the moduli space of rank \( r \) semi-stable \( \mathbb{Z}^r \)-lattices of volume 1.

More generally, for the standard parabolic subgroup \( P \) of \( GL_r \), we introduce the moduli spaces
\[ M^{P,\rho,p}_F[\Delta_F^1] := \left\{ g \in P(F) \setminus GL_r(A) : \deg g = 0, \bar{\rho}_g \leq p, \bar{\rho}_g \geq -p \right\}. \]

One checks that these moduli spaces \( M^{P,\rho,p}_F[\Delta_F^1] \) are all compact.

As usual, we fix the minimal parabolic subgroup \( P_0 \) corresponding to the partition \((1, \cdots, 1)\) with \( M_0 \) consisting of diagonal matrices. Then \( P = P_I = N_I M_I \) corresponds
to a certain partition \( I = (r_1, \cdots, r_{n_{p}}) \) of \( r \) with \( M_I \) the standard Levi and \( N_I \) the unipotent radical.

Now for a fixed irreducible automorphic representation \( \pi \) of \( M_I(\A) \), choose
\[
\phi \in A(N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A))_{\pi} \cap L^2(N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A))
\]
\[
:=A^2(N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A))_{\pi},
\]
with \( L^2(N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A)) \) the space of \( L^2 \) functions on the space \( Z_{G(\A)}N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A) \).
Denote the associated Eisenstein series by \( E(\phi, \pi) \in A(G(F) \backslash G(\A)) \).

**Definition.** (Weng) The rank \( r \) non-abelian \( L \)-function \( L^p_{F,r}(\phi, \pi) \) associated to the \( L^2 \)-automorphic form \( \phi \in A^2(N_I(\A)M_I(F) \backslash G(\A))_{\pi} \) for the number field \( F \) is defined by the following integration
\[
L^p_{F,r}(\phi, \pi) := \int_{M^P_{\A} \backslash A^P_{\A}} E(\phi, \pi)(g) \, dg, \quad \text{Re} \, \pi \in C.
\]

More generally, for any standard parabolic subgroup \( P_J = N_JM_J \supset P_I \) (so that the partition \( J \) is a refinement of \( I \)), we obtain a relative Eisenstein series
\[
E_J^I(\phi, \pi)(g) := \sum_{\delta \in P_J(F) / P_I(F)} \phi(\delta g), \quad \forall g \in P_J(F) \backslash G(\A).
\]

There is an open cone \( C_J^I \) in \( \text{Re} X^{P_J}_{M_J} \) s.t. if \( \text{Re} \pi \in C_J^I \), then \( E_J^I(\phi, \pi) \in A(P_I(F) \backslash G(\A)) \), where \( X^{P_I}_{M_I} \) is defined similarly as \( X^G_M \) with \( G \) replaced by \( P_I \). As such, we are able to define the associated non-abelian \( L \)-function by
\[
L^p_{F,r}(\phi, \pi) := \int_{M^P_{\A} \backslash A^P_{\A}} E_J^I(\phi, \pi)(g) \, dg, \quad \text{Re} \, \pi \in C_J^I.
\]

**Remark.** Here when defining non-abelian \( L \) -functions we assume that \( \phi \) comes from a single irreducible automorphic representations. But this restriction is rather artificial and can be removed easily: such a restriction only serves the purpose of giving the constructions and results in a very neat form.

## 19 Basic Properties of Non-Abelian \( L \) -Functions

### 19.1 Meromorphic Extension and Functional Equations

With the same notation as above, set \( \mathfrak{B} = [\pi] \). For \( w \in W \) the Weyl group of \( G = GL_r \), fix once and for all representative \( w \in G(F) \) of \( w \). Set \( M' := wMw^{-1} \) and denote the associated parabolic subgroup by \( P' = N'M' \). \( W \) acts naturally on the automorphic representations, from which we obtain an equivalence classes \( w\mathfrak{B} \) of automorphic representations of \( M'(\A) \). As usual, define the associated **intertwining operator** \( M(w, \pi) \) by
\[
(M(w, \pi)\phi)(g) := \int_{N'(F) \cap wN(F)w^{-1} \backslash N'(\A)} \phi(w^{-1}n'g) \, dn', \quad \forall g \in G(\A).
\]

51
One checks that if $\langle \text{Re} \varpi, \alpha \rangle \gg 0, \forall \alpha \in \Delta^G$,  
(i) for a fixed $\phi$, $M(w, \pi)\phi$ depends only on the double coset $M'(F)wM(F)$. So $M(w, \pi)\phi$ is well-defined for $w \in W$;  
(ii) the above integral converges absolutely and uniformly for $g$ varying in a compact subset of $G(\mathbb{A})$;  
(iii) $M(w, \pi)\phi \in A(N'(A)M'(F)\backslash G(A), \pi)$; and if $\phi$ is $L^2$, which from now on we always assume, so is $M(w, \pi)\phi$.

**Basic Facts of Non-Abelian $L$-Functions.** (Langlands, Weng)  
• **(Meromorphic Continuation)** $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ for $\text{Re} \varpi \in \mathbb{C}$ is well-defined and admits a unique meromorphic continuation to the whole space $\mathbb{P}$;  
• **(Functional Equation)** As meromorphic functions on $\mathbb{P}$,  
$$L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi) = L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(M(w, \pi)\phi, w\pi), \quad \forall w \in W.$$  
This is a direct consequence of the fundamental results of Langlands on Eisenstein series and spectrum decompositions and explains why only $L^2$-automorphic forms are used in the definition of non-abelian $L$s. (See e.g. [Ar1], [La1], [MW] and/or [W2,5]).

### 19.2 Holomorphicity and Singularities

Let $\varpi \in \mathbb{P}$ and $\alpha \in \Delta^G$. Define the function $h : \mathbb{P} \to \mathbb{C}$ by $\pi \otimes \lambda \mapsto \langle \lambda, \alpha \rangle$, $\forall \lambda \in X^G_M \simeq a^G_M$. Here as usual, $\alpha^\vee$ denotes the coroot associated to $\alpha$. Set $H := \{\varpi' \in \mathbb{P} : h(\varpi') = 0\}$ and call it a root hyperplane. Clearly the function $h$ is determined by $H$, hence we also denote $h$ by $h_H$. Note also that root hyperplanes depend on the base point $\pi$ we choose.

Let $D$ be a set of root hyperplanes. Then  
(i) the singularities of a meromorphic function $f$ on $\mathbb{P}$ is said to be supported by $D$ if for all $\pi \in \mathbb{P}$, there exist $n_\pi : D \to \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0}$ zero almost everywhere such that $\pi' \mapsto (\Pi_{H \subseteq D} h_H(\varpi')^{n_\pi(H)} \cdots f(\varpi'))$ is holomorphic at $\pi'$;  
(ii) the singularities of $f$ are said to be without multiplicity at $\pi$ if $n_\pi \in \{0, 1\}$;  
(iii) $D$ is said to be locally finite, if for any compact subset $C \subseteq \mathbb{P}$, $\{H \in D : H \cap C \neq \emptyset\}$ is finite.

**Basic Facts of Non-Abelian $L$-Functions.** (Langlands, Weng)  
• **(Holomorphicity)** (i) When $\text{Re} \varpi \in \mathbb{C}$, $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ is holomorphic;  
(ii) $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ is holomorphic at $\pi$ where $\text{Re} \varpi = 0$;  
• **(Singularities)** Assume further that $\phi$ is a cuspidal form. Then  
(i) There is a locally finite set of root hyperplanes $D$ such that the singularities of $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ are supported by $D$;  
(ii) Singularities of $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ are without multiplicities at $\pi$ if $\langle \text{Re} \varpi, \alpha \rangle \geq 0, \forall \alpha \in \Delta^G_M$;  
(iii) There are only finitely many singular hyperplanes of $L^{\mathbb{Q}}_{F, \lambda}(\phi, \pi)$ which intersect $\{\pi \in \mathbb{P} : \langle \text{Re} \varpi, \alpha \rangle \geq 0, \forall \alpha \in \Delta_M\}$.  
As above, this is a direct consequence of the fundamental results of Langlands on Eisenstein series and spectrum decompositions. (See e.g. [Ar1], [La1], [MW] and/or [W2,5]).
Chapter VIII. Symmetries and the Riemann Hypothesis

20 Abelian Parts of High Rank Zetas

20.1 Analytic Studies of High Rank Zetas

Associated to a number field $F$ is the genuine high rank zeta function $\xi_{F,r}(s)$ for every fixed $r \in \mathbb{Z}_{>0}$. Being natural generalizations of (completed) Dedekind zeta functions, these functions satisfy canonical properties for zetas as well. Namely, they admit meromorphic continuations to the whole complex $s$-plane, satisfy the functional equation $\xi_{F,r}(1 - s) = \xi_{F,r}(s)$ and have only two singularities, all simple poles, at $s = 0, 1$. Moreover, we expect that the Riemann Hypothesis holds for all zetas $\xi_{F,r}(s)$, namely, all zeros of $\xi_{F,r}(s)$ lie on the central line $\text{Re}(s) = \frac{1}{2}$.

Recall that $\xi_{F,r}(s)$ is defined by

$$
\xi_{F,r}(s) := \left(\frac{\Delta_r}{|\Delta_r|}\right)^{\frac{i\rho}{2}} \int_{M_{F,r}} \left(e^{\rho(F,\Lambda)} - 1\right) \cdot \left(e^{-s\deg(\Lambda)}\right) d\mu(\Lambda), \quad \text{Re}(s) > 1
$$

where $\Delta_F$ denotes the discriminant of $F$, $M_{F,r}$ the moduli space of semi-stable $O_F$-lattices of rank $r$ (here $O_F$ denotes the ring of integers), $h^0(F, \Lambda)$ and $\deg(\Lambda)$ denote the 0-th geo-arithmetic cohomology and the Arakelov degree of the lattice $\Lambda$, respectively, and $d\mu(\Lambda)$ a certain Tamagawa type measure on $M_{F,r}$. Defined using high rank lattices, these zetas then are expected to be naturally related with non-abelian aspects of number fields.

On the other hand, algebraic groups associated to $O_F$-lattices are general linear group $GL$ and special linear group $SL$. A natural question then is whether principal lattices associated to other reductive groups $G$ and their associated zeta functions can be introduced and studied.

While arithmetic approach using stability seems to be complicated, analytic one using analytic truncation is ready to be exposed. To start with, let us go back to high rank zetas. For simplicity, take $F$ to be the field $\mathbb{Q}$ of rationals. Then, via a Mellin transform, high rank zeta $\xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s)$ can be written as

$$
\xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(s) = \int_{M_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]} \tilde{E}(\Lambda, s) \ d\mu(\Lambda), \quad \text{Re}(s) > 1,
$$

where $M_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]$ denotes the moduli space of $\mathbb{Z}$-lattices of rank $r$ and volume 1 and $\tilde{E}(\Lambda, s)$ the completed Epstein zeta functions associated to $\Lambda$. Recall that the moduli space $M_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]$ may be viewed as a compact subset in $SL(r, \mathbb{Z}) \backslash SL(r, \mathbb{R})/SO(r)$ and Epstein zeta functions may be written as the relative Eisenstein series $E_{SL(r)}^{P_{r-1,1}}(1; s; g)$ associated to the constant function $1$ on the maximal parabolic subgroup $P_{r-1,1}$ corresponding to the partition $r = (r - 1) + 1$ of $SL(r)$, we have

$$
\frac{2}{r} \cdot \xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(\frac{2}{r} \cdot s) = \int_{M_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1] \subset SL(r, \mathbb{Z}) \backslash SL(r, \mathbb{R})/SO(r)} \tilde{E}(\Lambda, s) \ d\mu(g)
$$

$$
= \int_{SL(r, \mathbb{Z}) \backslash SL(r, \mathbb{R})/SO(r)} 1_{M_{\mathbb{Q},r}[1]}(g) \cdot \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \ d\mu(g)
$$

53
where $1_{M_2(1)}(g)$ denotes the characteristic function of the compact subset $M_2(1)$.

Recall also that, in parallel, to remedy the divergence of integration

$$\int_{S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)} \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g),$$

in theories of automorphic forms and trace formula, Rankin, Selberg and Arthur introduced an analytic truncation for smooth functions $\phi(g)$ over $S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)$. Simply put, Arthur’s analytic truncation is a device to get rapidly decreasing functions from slowly increasing functions by cutting off slow growth parts near all types of cusps uniformly. Being truncations near cusps, a rather large, or better, sufficiently regular, new parameter $T$ must be introduced. In particular, when applying to Eisenstein series $\tilde{E}(1; s; g)$ and to $1$ on $S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})$, we get the truncated function $\Lambda^T \tilde{E}(1; s; g)$ and $(\Lambda^T 1)(g)$, respectively. Consequently, by using basic properties on Arthur’s truncation, we obtain the following well-defined integrations

$$\int_{S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)} \Lambda^T \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g)$$

$$= \int_{S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)} (\Lambda^T 1)(g) \cdot \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g)$$

$$= \int_{\tilde{T}(T) < S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)} \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g)$$

where $\tilde{T}(T)$ is the compact subset in (a fundamental domain for the quotient space) $S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{Z})/S \mathrm{L}(r,\mathbb{R})/S \mathrm{O}(r)$ whose characteristic function is given by $(\Lambda^T 1)(g)$.

### 20.2 Advanced Rankin-Selberg and Zagier Methods

As such, we find an analytic way to understand our high rank zetas, provided that the above analytic discussion for sufficiently positive parameter $T$ can be further strengthened so as to work for smaller $T$, in particular, for $T = 0$, as well. In general, it is very difficult. Fortunately, as recalled in the previous two chapters, in the case of $SL$, this can be achieved based on an intrinsic geo-arithmetic result, called the Micro-Global Bridge, an analogue of the following basic principle in Geometric Invariant Theory for unstability: A point is not stable, then there is a parabolic subgroup which destroys the stability. Consequently, we have

$$\frac{2}{r} \cdot \xi_{\mathbb{Q},r}(\frac{2}{r} \cdot s) = \left( \int_{G(\mathbb{Z})/G(\mathbb{R})/K} \Lambda^T \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g) \right)_{T=0}.$$ 

This then leads to evaluation of the special Eisenstein periods

$$\int_{G(\mathbb{Z})/G(\mathbb{R})/K} \Lambda^T \tilde{E}(1; s; g) \, d\mu(g),$$

and more generally the evaluation of Eisenstein periods

$$\int_{G(\mathbb{Z})/G(\mathbb{R})/K} \Lambda^T E(\phi; \lambda; g) \, d\mu(g),$$

54
where $K$ a certain maximal compact subgroup of a reductive group $G$, $\phi$ is a $P$-level automorphic forms with $P$ parabolic, and $E(\phi; \lambda; g)$ the relative Eisenstein series from $P$ to $G$ associated to a $P$-level $L^2$ form $\phi$.

Unfortunately, in general, it is quite difficult to find a close formula for Eisenstein periods. But, when $\phi$ is cuspidal, then the corresponding Eisenstein period can be calculated, thanks to the work of [JLR] and [W4], an advanced version of Rankin-Selberg & Zagier method.

### 20.3 Discovery of Maximal Parabolics: $\text{SL}$, $\text{Sp}$ and $G_2$

Back to high rank zeta functions, the bad news is that this powerful calculation cannot be applied directly, since in the specific Eisenstein series, i.e., the classical Epstein zeta, used, the function $1$, corresponding to $\phi$ in general picture, on the maximal parabolic $P_{r-1}$, is only $L^2$, far from being cuspidal. To overcome this technical difficulty, we, partially also motivated by our earlier work on the so-called abelian part of high rank zeta functions ([W2,4]) and Venkov’s trace formula for $\text{SL}(3)$ ([Ve]), introduce Eisenstein series $E^{\text{G}/\text{B}}(1; \lambda; g)$ associated to the constant function $1$ on $B = P_{1,1,...,1}$, the Borel, into our study, since

1) being over the Borel, the constant function $1$ is cuspidal. So the associated Eisenstein period $\omega^{\text{G}/\text{Q}}(\lambda)$ can be evaluated following [JLR]/[W4]; and

2) $E(1; s; g)$ used in high rank zetas can be realized as residues of $E^{\text{G}/\text{B}}(1; \lambda; g)$ along with suitable singular hyper-planes, a result essentially due to Siegel and Langlands, but carried out by Diehl ([D]).

In particular, for 1), we now know that

$$
\omega^{\text{G}/\text{Q}}(\lambda) = \sum_{w \in W} \left( e^{(w\lambda - \rho; T)} \prod_{\alpha > 0, w<0} \frac{\xi_{\text{Q}}((\lambda, \alpha^\vee))}{\xi_{\text{Q}}((\lambda, \alpha^\vee) + 1)} \right).
$$

Here $W$ denotes the associated Weyl group, $\Delta_0$ the collection of simple roots, $\rho := \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha > 0} \alpha$, and $\alpha^\vee$ the co-root associated to $\alpha$.

With all this, it is clear that to get genuine zetas associated to reductive groups $G$, it may be more economical to use the period $\omega^{\text{G}/\text{Q}}(\lambda)$ defined by

$$
\omega^{\text{G}/\text{F}}(\lambda) := \sum_{w \in W} \left( \frac{1}{\prod_{\alpha \in \Delta_0} (w\lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee)} \prod_{\alpha > 0, w<0} \frac{\xi_{\text{F}}((\lambda, \alpha^\vee))}{\xi_{\text{F}}((\lambda, \alpha^\vee) + 1)} \right)
$$

which make sense for all reductive groups $G$ defined over $F$. Here as usual, $\xi_{\text{F}}(s)$ denotes the completed Dedekind zeta function of $F$.

Back to the field of rationals. The period $\omega^{\text{G}/\text{Q}}(\lambda)$ of $G$ over $\mathbb{Q}$ is of rank($G$) variables. To get a single variable zeta out from it, we need to take residues along with rank($G$) − 1 (linearly independent) singular hyper-planes. So proper choices for singular spaces should be made. This is done for $\text{SL}$ and $\text{Sp}$ in [W7], thanks to Diehl’s paper ([D]). (In fact, Diehl dealt with $\text{Sp}$ only. But due to the fact that positive definite matrices are naturally associated to $\mathbb{Z}$-lattices and Siegel upper spaces, $\text{SL}$ can be also treated successfully with a bit extra care.) Simply put, for each $G = \text{SL}(r)$ (or $= \text{Sp}(2n)$),
within the framework of classical Eisenstein series, there exists only one choice of rank\((G) - 1\) singular hyper-planes \(H_1 = 0\), \(H_2 = 0\), \ldots, \(H_{\text{rank}(G)-1} = 0\). Moreover, after taking residues along with them, that is,

\[
\text{Res}_{\text{H}:=0,H_2=0,\ldots,H_{\text{rank}(G)-1}=0} \omega^G_Q(\lambda),
\]

with suitable normalizations, we can get a new zeta \(\xi^G_Q(s)\) for \(G\).

At this point, the role played in new zetas \(\xi^G_Q(s)\) by maximal parabolic subgroups has not yet emerged. It is only after the study done for \(G_2\) that we understand such a key role. Nevertheless, what we do observe from these discussions on \(SL\) and \(Sp\) is the follows: all singular hyper-planes are taken from only asingle term appeared in the period \(\omega^G_Q(\lambda)\). More precisely, the term corresponding to \(w = \text{Id}\), the Weyl element Identity. In other words, singular hyper-planes are taken from the denominator of the expression

\[
\frac{1}{\prod_{\alpha \in \Delta_0} (\lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee)}.
\]

(Totally, there are \(\text{rank}(G)\) factors, among which we have carefully chosen \(\text{rank}(G) - 1\) for \(G = SL, Sp\).) In particular, for the exceptional \(G_2\), being a rank two group and hence an obvious choice for our next test, this reads as

\[
\frac{1}{\langle \lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee_{\text{short}} \rangle \cdot (\lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee_{\text{long}})}
\]

where \(\alpha_{\text{short}}\), \(\alpha_{\text{long}}\) denote the short and long roots of \(G_2\) respectively. So two possibilities,

a) \(\text{Res}_{\langle \lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee_{\text{short}} \rangle = 0} \omega^G_Q(\lambda)\), leading to \(\xi^G_Q/P_{\text{int}}(s)\) after suitable normalization; and

b) \(\text{Res}_{\langle \lambda - \rho, \alpha^\vee_{\text{long}} \rangle = 0} \omega^G_Q(\lambda)\), leading to \(\xi^G_Q/P_{\text{long}}(s)\) after suitable normalization.

With this, by the fact that there exists a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence between collection of conjugation classes of maximal parabolic groups and simple roots, we are able to detect in [W7] the crucial role played by maximal parabolic subgroups and hence are able to offer the proper definition for the genuine zetas associated to pairs of reductive groups and their maximal parabolic subgroups.

21 Abelian Zetas for \((G, P)\)

21.1 Definition

Motivated by the above discussion, we can introduce a genuine abelian zeta function for pairs \((G, P)\) defined over number fields, consisting of reductive groups \(G\) and their maximal reductive groups. As the details is explained in [W7] collected in this volume, we here only sketch key features of such zetas.

Thus let \(G\) be a reductive group and \(P\) a maximal parabolic subgroup of \(G\) both defined over \(\mathbb{Q}\). Denote by \(\Delta_0\) the collection of simple roots. For any root \(\alpha\) denotes by \(\alpha^\vee\) the corresponding co-root and \(\rho := \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha > 0} \alpha\). Denote by \(W\) the associated Weyl
group. The for any \( \lambda \) in a suitable positive chamber of the root space, define the abelian zeta function associated to \((G, P)\) over \( \mathbb{Q} \) by

\[
\xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s) := \text{Norm} \left[ \text{Res}_{\langle \lambda - \rho, \alpha \rangle = 0, \alpha \in \Delta_0 \setminus \{ \alpha_P \}} \omega_{G}^{G/P}(s) \right]
\]

where as above,

\[
\omega_{G}^{G/P}(s) := \sum_{w \in W} \prod_{\alpha \in \Delta_0} \frac{1}{(w^s \lambda - \rho, \alpha_\alpha)} \cdot \prod_{\alpha > 0, w \alpha < 0} \xi_{G}^{G/P}(\langle \lambda, \alpha \rangle + 1),
\]

\( \alpha_p \) denotes the unique simple root corresponding to the maximal parabolic subgroup \( P \), \( s := (\lambda - \rho, \alpha_p^\vee) \), and Norm means a certain normalization, the details of which may be found in [W7].

### 21.2 Conjectural FE and the RH

As such, then easily, \( \xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s) \) is a well-defined meromorphic function on the whole complex \( s \)-plane. And strikingly, the structures of all this zetas can be summarized by the following

**Main Conjecture.**

(i) **(Functional Equation)**

\[
\xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(1 - s) = \xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s);
\]

(ii) **(The Riemann Hypothesis)**

\[
\xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s) = 0 \text{ implies that } \text{Re}(s) = \frac{1}{2}.
\]

**Remarks.**

(i) Functional equation is checked in [W7] for 10 examples listed in the appendix there, namely for the groups \( SL(2, 3, 4, 5) \), \( Sp(4) \), and \( G_2 \); More generally, in April 2008, Henry Kim in a joint effort with the author obtained a proof of the functional equation for \( \xi_{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}^{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}(s) \) ([KW2]); Independently, in June, 2009, Yasushi Komori ([Ko]) found an elegant proof of the functional equation for all zetas \( \xi_{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}^{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}(s) \):

**Functional Equation.** For zeta functions \( \xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s) \), we have

\[
\xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(1 - s) = \xi_{G/P}^{G/P}(s).
\]

(ii) Based on symmetries, the Riemann Hypothesis for the above 10 examples is solved partially by J. Lagarias-M. Suzuki, Suzuki, and fully by H. Ki. Ki’s method is expected to have more applications. For details, please go to ([LS], [Su1,2], [SW], [Ki1,2]).

### 22 Abelian Parts of High Rank Zetas

In a certain sense, \( \xi_{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}^{SL(n)/P_{n-1}}(s) \) may be viewed as an abelian part of the high rank zeta \( \xi_{SL_2}(s) \), since it is naturally related to the so-called constant terms of the Eisenstein series \( E_{SL/B}(1; \lambda, g) \). Formally, starting from Eisenstein series \( E_{G/B}(1; \lambda, g) \), we
can get high rank zeta functions by first taking the residues along suitable singular hyperplanes, then taking integration over moduli spaces of semi-stable lattices. That is to say, $\xi_{Q, r}(s)$ corresponds to $(\text{Res} \to \int)$-ordered construction. In this sense, the zeta function $\xi_{\text{SL}(r), Q}(s)$ corresponds to $(\int \to \text{Res})$-ordered construction.

Since there is no needs to take residues, for $\text{SL}(2)$, we have $\xi_{Q, 2}(s) = \xi_{\text{SL}(2)/P_{1, 1}}(s)$. However, in general, there is a discrepancy between $\xi_{Q, r}(s)$ and $\xi_{\text{SL}(r)/P_{r-1, 1}}(s)$, because of the obstruction for the exchanging of $\int$ and Res.

Remarks. (i) Non-abelian zetas were essentially introduced around 2000. Contrary to the publishing order, the zetas for number fields was first introduced, and it was for the purpose to get some concrete feelings that we started our examples with function fields;
(ii) There are a few flaws in our works on the zeta associated to $\text{SL}(3)$ in the final chapter of [W2]. More precisely, what we have done there is the abelian zeta $\xi_{Q, 3}^{\text{SL}(3)/P_{2, 1}}(s)$, instead of the non-abelian rank 3 zeta $\xi_{Q, 3}(s)$; Moreover, there are sign mistakes in the formula for $\xi_{Q, 3}^{\text{SL}(3)/P_{2, 1}}(s)$. The right one should be

\[
\xi_{Q, 3}^{\text{SL}(3)/P_{2, 1}}(s) = \xi_{Q}(2) \cdot \frac{1}{3s - 3} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s) - \xi_{Q}(2) \cdot \frac{1}{3s} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s - 2) - \frac{1}{3} \cdot \frac{1}{3s - 3} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s - 1) + \frac{1}{3} \cdot \frac{1}{3s} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s - 1) + \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{1}{3s - 1} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s - 2) - \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{1}{3s - 2} \cdot \xi_{Q}(3s)
\]

(iii) Combinatorial techniques used by Arthur for reduction theory and analytic truncations are discussed in details in our preprint (arXiv:Math/0505016). But we remind the reader that $\tau$, the characteristic function in §13.4, does not work well for analytic truncations.
Part C. General CFT and Stability

In this part, we will propose a general CFT for \(p\)-adic number fields using stability of what we call filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules, built on Fontaine’s theory of \(p\)-adic Galois representations. The key points are

1) (Fontaine||Berger) \(p\)-adic monodromy theorem for \(p\)-adic representations which claims that a de Rham representation is a potentially semi-stable representation;
2) (Fontaine||Fontaine, Colmez-Fontaine) characterization of semi-stable representations in terms of weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-modules;
3) a notion of \(\omega\)-structures measuring (higher) ramifications of de Rham representations;
4) a conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law, characterizing de Rham representations in terms of semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules of slope zero.

Chapter IX. \(l\)-adic Representations for \(p\)-adic Fields

23 Finite Monodromy and Nilpotency

23.1 Absolute Galois Group and Its pro-\(l\) Structures

Let \(K\) be a \(p\)-adic number field, i.e., a finite extension of \(\mathbb{Q}_p\). Denote by \(k\) its residue field. Fix an algebraic closure \(\overline{K}\) of \(K\). Let \(G_K := \text{Gal}(\overline{K}/K)\) be the absolute Galois group of \(K\) with \(I_K\) its inertial subgroup and \(P_K\) its wild ramification group. Then from the theory of local fields, we have the following structural exact sequences

\[1 \to I_K \to G_K \to G_k \to 1 \quad \text{and} \quad 1 \to P_K \to I_K \to \prod_{l \neq p} \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \to 1.\]

With its application to \(l\)-adic representation in mind, let us fix a prime \(l \neq p\). To avoid the pro-\(l\) part systematically, define \(P_{K,l}\) to be the inverse image of \(\prod_{l \neq p} \mathbb{Z}_l(1)\). Accordingly, we have an induced exact sequence

\[1 \to P_K \to P_{K,l} \to \prod_{l \neq p, l} \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \to 1.\]

By contrast, the pro-\(l\) part can be read from the exact sequence

\[1 \to \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \to G_{K,l} \to G_k \to 1,\]

where the group \(G_{K,l}\) is defined via the exact sequence

\[1 \to P_{K,l} \to G_K \to G_{K,l} \to 1.\]

Consequently, \(g \in G_k\) acts naturally on \(\gamma \in P_{K,l}\) via

\[\gamma \mapsto g\gamma g^{-1}.\]
We are ready to state one of the most intrinsic relations for Galois groups of local fields:

**Tame Relation.** (Iwasawa) For any \( \gamma \in \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \) and \( \text{Fr}_k \in G_k \) the absolute arithmetic Frobenius, a topological generator, we have

\[
\text{Fr}_k \cdot \gamma \cdot \text{Fr}_k^{-1} = \gamma^q
\]

where \( q := \#k \).

### 23.2 Finite Monodromy

We say that a representation \( \rho : G_K \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Q}_l}(V) \) is a \( \ell \)-adic representation of \( G_K \) if \( V/\mathbb{Q}_l \) is finite dimensional and \( \rho \) is continuous. The following is the basic result on the structure of \( \ell \)-adic Galois representations:

**Finite Monodromy.** (Grothendieck) If \( \rho : G_K \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Q}_l}(V) \) is a \( \ell \)-adic representation, then \( \rho(P_K) \) is finite.

**Sketch of a proof.** Since it is a profinite group, the Galois group \( G_K \) is compact. Consequently, there exists a maximal \( G_K \)-stable \( \mathbb{Z}_l \)-lattice \( \Lambda \) in \( V \) such that \( \rho \) admits an integral form

\[
\rho_{\mathbb{Z}_l} : G_K \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(\Lambda).
\]

As such, for any \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), define a subgroup \( N_n \) of \( \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(\Lambda) \) to be the kernel of mod \( l^n \) map

\[
1 \rightarrow N_n \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(\Lambda) \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(\Lambda/l^n \Lambda) \rightarrow 1.
\]

Clearly, \( N_1/N_n \) is a finite group of order equal to a power of \( \ell \) and hence \( N_1 = \lim_{\leftarrow n} N_n \) is a profinite group.

On the other hand, by definition, \( P_{K,I} \) is a projective limit of finite groups whose orders are prime to \( \ell \), thus \( \rho_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(P_{K,I}) \cap N_1 = \{1\} \). Consequently, \( \rho(P_{K,I}) = \rho_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(P_{K,I}) \) is naturally embedded in \( \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Z}_l}(\Lambda/l\Lambda) \) which is a finite group.

### 23.3 Unipotency

Based on finite monodromy property, we further have the following

**Monodromy Theorem.** (Grothendieck) Let \( \rho : G_K \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Q}_l}(V) \) be a \( \ell \)-adic representation. Then there exists a finite Galois extension \( L/K \) such that for the induced representation \( \rho|_{G_L} : G_L(\subset G_K) \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Q}_l}(V) \), the inertial subgroup \( I_L(\subset G_L) \) acts unipotently.

**Sketch of a proof.** This is a direct consequence of the Tame relation. Indeed, by the finite monodromy result in the previous subsection, replacing \( K \) by a finite Galois extension, we may assume that \( P_{K,I} \) acts on \( V \) trivially. Consequently, since \( G_K/P_{K,I} = G_{K,I} \), the representation \( \rho \) factors through \( G_{K,I} \):

\[
\rho : G_K \rightarrow G_{K,I} \rightarrow \text{Aut}_{\mathbb{Q}_l}(V).
\]
Recall now that we have the following structural exact sequence

\[ 1 \to \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \to G_{K,l} \to G_k \to 1 \]

and the tame relation, recalled above, implies that for any \( t \in \mathbb{Z}_l(1), n \in \mathbb{N} \),

\[ \text{Fr}_k^n \cdot t \cdot \text{Fr}_k^{-n} = t^n, \]

with \( \text{Fr}_k \) the absolute Frobenius of \( k \) and \( q = \#k \). Consequently, if \( \lambda \) is an eigenvalues of \( \bar{\rho}(t) = \rho(t) \), then so is \( \lambda^n \). This implies that all such \( \lambda \)'s are roots of unity. Namely, all elements of \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \subset G_{K,l} \) act unipotently. But \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \) is rank one, so if we choose \( t_0 \) as a topological generator, then the topological closure \( \langle t_0 \rangle \) of the subgroup generated by \( t_0 \) acts unipotently on \( V \). Since \( \langle t_0 \rangle \) is clearly an open subgroup of \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \), so the whole \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \) acts on \( V \) unipotently. With this, to complete the proof, it suffices to note that the induced action of inertia subgroup \( I_{K} \) factors through \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \) via the natural projection map

\[ I_K \twoheadrightarrow I_K/P_K \simeq \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \times \prod_{l \neq p, l} \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \to \mathbb{Z}_l(1), \]

and hence is unipotent.

**Example.** If \( V/\mathbb{Q}_l \) is one dimensional, from the Monodromy Theorem above, there exists a finite Galois extension \( L/K \) such that the induced action of \( I_L \) on \( V \) is unipotent. That means that the image of \( I_L \) is a finite group. As such, replacing \( L \) with a further extension, we may assume that \( I_L \) acts trivially on \( V \). Particularly, this works for the Tate module \( \mathbb{Z}_l(1) \).

**Definition.** Let \( \rho : G_K \to \text{Aut}(V) \) be a \( l \)-adic representation. Then \( \rho \) is called

1.a) **unramified** if \( I_K \) acts on \( V \) trivially;
1.b) **potentially unramified** if there exists a finite Galois extension \( L/K \subset \overline{K}/K \) such that the induced action of \( I_L \) on \( V \) is trivial;

2.a) **semi-stable** if \( I_K \) acts on \( V \) unipotently;
2.b) **potentially semi-stable** if there exists a finite Galois extension \( L/K \subset \overline{K}/K \) such that the induced action of \( I_L \) on \( V \) is unipotent.

In terms of this language, then Grothendieck’s Monodromy Theorem claims that all \( l \)-adic Galois representation of a \( p \)-adic number field, \( l \neq p \), is potentially semi-stable.
Chapter X. Primary Theory of $p$-adic Representations

In this chapter, we expose some elementary structures of $p$-adic Galois representations following [FO].

24 Preliminary Structures of Absolute Galois Groups

24.1 Galois Theory: A $p$-adic Consideration

Let $K$ be a $p$-adic number field with $k$ its residue field. Fix an algebraic closure $\overline{K}$. $\overline{K}$ is not complete with respect to the natural extension of the $p$-adic valuation of $K$. Denote the corresponding completion of $\overline{K}$ by $C = C_p$.

Denote by $G_K := \text{Gal}(\overline{K}/K)$ the absolute Galois group of $K$. Then, from $p$-adic theory point of view, $G_K$ can be naturally decomposed into two parts, namely arithmetic one corresponding to the cyclotomic extensions by $p^n$-th roots of unity, and the geometric one, corresponding to the so-called field of norms.

More precisely, let $K_n := K(\mu_{p^n})$ where $\mu_{p^n}$ denotes the collection of $p^n$-th roots of unity in $K$ and set $K_\infty := \cup_n K_n$. Denote the corresponding Galois groups by $H_K := \text{Gal}(\overline{K}/K_\infty)$ and $\Gamma_K := \text{Gal}(K_\infty/K)$. Clearly, $G_K/H_K \cong \Gamma_K$.

24.2 Arithmetic Structure: Cyclotomic Character

Denote by $K_0 := \text{Fr}_W(k)$ the fractional field of the ring of Witt vectors with coefficients in $k$. Then it is known that $K_0$ is the maximal unramified extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p$ contained in $K$ and $\Gamma_{K_0}$ is canonically isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}_p^*$ via the cyclotomic character $\chi_{\text{cyc}}$.

Clearly, $\Gamma_K$ may be viewed as an open subgroup of $\Gamma_{K_0}$ via $\chi_{\text{cyc}}$.

The natural exponential map gives a $\mathbb{Z}_p$-module structure on $\mathbb{Z}_p^*$. One can easily checks that it is of rank one and its torsion part is given by

$$(\mathbb{Z}_p^*)_{\text{tor}} = \begin{cases} \mathbb{F}_p, & p \neq 2 \\ \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}, & p = 2. \end{cases}$$

Consequently, if we denote by $\Delta_K$ the torsion subgroup of $\Gamma_K$, then $K_{\infty}^{\Delta_K} = (K_{0,\infty})^{\Delta_{K_0}}$. $K/K$ is a $\mathbb{Z}_p$-extension with the same residue field $k$ of $K$.

For later use, denote by $k'$ the residue field of $K_\infty$. From the discussion above, we see that it may happen that $k'$ is different from $k$.

24.3 Geometric Structure: Fields of Norms

24.3.1 Definition

With $\Gamma_K$ understood, let us turn our attention to $H_K$ part. This then leads to the theory of fields of norms due to Witenberger. Roughly speaking, this theory says that the arithmetically defined Galois group $H_K := \text{Gal}(\overline{K}/K_\infty)$ of fields of characteristic zero admits a natural geometric interpretation in terms of Galois group of localizations of
function fields over finite fields, due to the fact that the natural norm map \( N_{K_n/K_{n-1}} \) is quite related with the \( p \)-th power map.

More precisely, motivated by a work of Tate, for fields \( K_n \), consider norm maps \( N_{K_n/K_{n-1}} \). Clearly, \( \{(K_n, N_{K_n/K_{n-1}})\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) forms a projective system. Let \( N_K := \lim_{\longleftarrow n} K_n \) be the corresponding limit. That is,

(i) as a set,
\[
N_K = \{ (x^{(0)}, x^{(1)}, \ldots, x^{(n)}, \ldots) : x^{(n)} \in K_n, \ N_{K_n/K_{n-1}}(x^{(n)}) = x^{(n-1)} \};
\]

(ii) for the ring structure, the addition and multiplication on \( N_K \) are given by
\[
(x + y)^{(n)} := \lim_{m \to \infty} N_{K_{n+m}/K_n}(x^{(n+m)} + y^{(n+m)});
\]
\[
(x \cdot y)^{(n)} := x^{(n)} \cdot y^{(n)}
\]
for \( x = (x^{(n)}) \), \( y = (y^{(n)}) \in N_K \).

Much more holds:

**Theorem.** (Wintenberger) \( N_K \) is a field, the so-called field of norms of \( K_{\infty}/K \), such that its separable closure \( N_K^s \) is given by
\[
\bigcup_{L/K: \text{finite Galois}} N_L,
\]
and \( G_{N_K} := \text{Gal}(N_K^s/N_K) \) is isomorphic to \( H_K \).

In particular,

(i) for every finite Galois extension \( L/K \) in \( \overline{K}/K \), \( N_L/N_K \) is a finite Galois extension with
\[
\text{Gal}(N_L/N_K) \cong \text{Gal}(L_{\infty}/K_{\infty});
\]

(ii) for every finite Galois extension \( N_*/N_K \), there exists a finite Galois extension \( L/K \) such that \( N_L = N_* \).

### 24.3.2 Geometric Interpretation

To give a geometric interpretation of \( N_K \), let us start with \( N_{K_0} \). If we set \( E_{K_0} := k((\pi_{K_0})) \) for a certain indeterminant \( \pi_{K_0} \) over \( k \), then
\[
N_{K_0} \cong E_{K_0} = k((\pi_{K_0})).
\]
And more generally, for a certain indeterminant \( \pi_K \) over \( k' \),
\[
N_K \cong E_K = k'((\pi_K)).
\]

To be more precise, this is realized via the following consideration. First, by ramification theory, we see that the norm map \( N_{K_n/K_{n-1}} \) is not far away from being the \( p \)-th power map. Accordingly, it is natural to introduce the ring
\[
\overline{E}^+ := \lim_{\longleftarrow n} O_{\overline{C}} := \left\{ (x^{(0)}, x^{(1)}, \ldots) : x^{(n)} \in O_{\overline{C}}, (x^{(n+1)})^p = x^{(n)} \right\}
\]

63
where \( \mathcal{O}_C \) denotes the ring of integers of \( C \). Define the ring structure on \( \widetilde{E}^+ \) by
\[
(x + y)^{(n)} := \lim_{m \to \infty} \left( x^{(n+m)} + y^{(n+m)} \right)^{p^n} \quad \text{and} \quad (x \cdot y)^{(n)} := x^{(n)} \cdot y^{(n)}
\]
for \( x = (x^{(n)}) \), \( y = (y^{(n)}) \in \widetilde{E}^+ \).

One can easily check that \( \widetilde{E}^+ \) is perfect. It is also of characteristic \( p \). Indeed, there is a bijection
\[
\lim_{\lambda \to \lambda^p} \mathcal{O}_C \cong \lim_{\lambda \to \lambda^p} \mathcal{O}_C / p\mathcal{O}_C.
\]
This implies that
\[
\widetilde{E}^+ \cong \lim_{\lambda \to \lambda^p} \mathcal{O}_K / p\mathcal{O}_K.
\]

Moreover, if we set \( \varepsilon = (\varepsilon^{(n)}) \in \widetilde{E}^+ \) with \( \varepsilon^{(0)} = 1 \), \( \varepsilon^{(1)} \neq 1 \) defined by primitive \( p^n \)-th roots of unity, and set
\[
\overline{\mathbb{E}} = \overline{\mathbb{E}}[(\varepsilon - 1)^{-1}].
\]
Then this is the completion of the algebraic (yet non-separable) closure of \( \mathbb{F}_p((\varepsilon - 1)) \).

By definition, there is a natural action of \( H_K \) on \( \overline{\mathbb{E}} \). With the interpretation of \( \overline{\mathbb{E}} \cong \lim_{\lambda \to \lambda^p} \mathcal{O}_K / p\mathcal{O}_K \) in terms of \( \mathcal{O}_K \) (not the one from the definition in terms of the completion \( \mathcal{O}_C \)), this action can be read clearly as follows:

We have a natural injective morphism
\[
H_K \to \overline{\mathbb{E}} \quad (x^{(n)}) \mapsto (y^{(n)}) := \lim_{m \to \infty} (x^{(n+m)})^{p^n}
\]
Moreover, one checks that
(i) \( N_{K_0} \cong k((\pi)) \) with \( \pi = \varepsilon - 1 \);
(ii) \( \overline{\mathbb{E}}_K = (\overline{\mathbb{E}})^{H_K} \) coincides with the image of \( N_K \);
(iii) \( H_{L/K} := H_K / H_L = \text{Gal}(L_{\infty}/K_{\infty}) \cong \text{Gal}(N_L/N_K) \cong \text{Gal}(\overline{\mathbb{E}}_L/\overline{\mathbb{E}}_K) \).

25 Galois Representations: Characteristic \( p \)-theory

In this section we concentrate on Galois representations of fields of characteristic \( p \), motivated by the geometric interpretation of \( H_K \).

25.1 \( \mathbb{F}_p \)-Representations

Assume that \( E \) is a field of characteristic \( p > 0 \). Fix a separable closure \( E^s \) and let \( G_E := \text{Gal}(E^s/E) \) the corresponding absolute Galois group. Denote by \( \sigma \colon \lambda \mapsto \lambda^p \) the absolute Frobenius of \( E \). Let \( V \) be a mod \( p \) representation of \( G_E \) of dimension \( d \), i.e., a \( \mathbb{F}_p \)-vector space \( V \) of dimension \( d \) equipped with a linear and continuous action of \( G_E \).
Since $G_E$ acts naturally on $E'$, it makes sense to talk about the $E'$-representation $E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V$ equipped with $G_E$. The advantage of taking this extension of scalars is that, by Hilbert Theorem 90, one checks that if we set $\mathbb{D}(V) := \left( E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V \right)^{G_E}$, then

(i) $\mathbb{D}(V)$ is a $E'$-vector space of dimension $d$; and

(ii) the natural map $\alpha_V : E' \otimes_{E} \mathbb{D}(V) \rightarrow E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V$

is an isomorphism of $G_E$-modules. Here, as usual, on the left hand side, the action concentrates on the coefficients $E'$, while on the right, it is given by the diagonal action.

Moreover, since the absolute Frobenius $\sigma$ commutes with the action of $G_E$, via the natural definition $\varphi : \lambda \otimes v \mapsto \sigma(\lambda) \otimes v$, we obtain a Frobenius on $E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V$ such that if $x \in \mathbb{D}(V)$ then so is $\varphi(x)$. Consequently, we obtain a natural Frobenius $\varphi : \mathbb{D}(V) \rightarrow \mathbb{D}(V)$.

\subsection{25.2 Etale $\varphi$-modules}

Motivated by the above discussion, we call a finite dimensional $E$-vector space $M$ equipped with a $\sigma$-semi-linear map $\varphi : M \rightarrow M$ a $\varphi$-module over $E$.

We call a $\varphi$-module \textit{etale} if $M = E \cdot \varphi(M)$.

**Proposition.** (See e.g.,[FO]) If $V$ is a $\mathbb{F}_p$-representation of $G_E$ of dimension $d$, then $\mathbb{D}(V) := \left( E' \otimes V \right)^{G_E}$ is an etale $\varphi$-module of dimension $d$ over $E$. Moreover, as $G_E$-modules, we have an isomorphism

$\alpha_V : E' \otimes_{E} \mathbb{D}(V) \rightarrow E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V$.

\subsection{25.3 Characteristic $p$ Representation and Etale $\varphi$-Module}

Denote by $\text{Rep}_{\mathbb{F}_p}(G_E)$ the category of all mod $p$ representations of $G_E$ and $\mathcal{M}_E^\varphi(E)$ the category of etale $\varphi$-modules over $E$ with morphisms being $E$-linear maps which commute with $\varphi$. Then from the paragraph above we have a natural functor

$\mathbb{D}_E : \text{Rep}_{\mathbb{F}_p}(G_E) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_E^\varphi(E)$.

**Proposition.** (Fontaine) The natural functor

$\mathbb{D}_E : \text{Rep}_{\mathbb{F}_p}(G_E) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_E^\varphi(E)$

$V \mapsto \mathbb{D}_E(V) := \left( E' \otimes_{\mathbb{F}_p} V \right)^{G_E}$

gives an equivalence of categories and its quasi-inverse is given by

$\mathbb{V}_E : \mathcal{M}_E^\varphi(E) \rightarrow \text{Rep}_{\mathbb{F}_p}(G_E)$

$M \mapsto \mathbb{V}_E(M) := \left( E' \otimes_E M \right)^{\sigma=1}$. 

65
26 Lifting to Characteristic Zero

As our final aim is to study $p$-adic representations of Galois groups of local fields, it
is natural to see how the discussions above on $F_p$-representations, a characteristic $p$-
theory, can be lifted to $p$-adic representations, a characteristic zero theory. We present
the related materials following [FO] (and [Ber2]).

26.1 Witt Vectors and Teichmüller Lift

Let us start with a preparation on the coefficients, particularly, the theory of Witt vec-
tors.

So let $R$ be a perfect ring of characteristic $p$. We want to construct a ring $W(R)$,
the so-called ring of Witt vectors with coefficients in $R$, such that $p$ is not nilpotent and
$W(R)$ is separated and complete for the topology defined by $p^n W(R)$. The main result
on Witt rings is that such a ring $W(R)$ does exists, unique up to isomorphism, and has
$R$ as its residual ring. Consequently, if $\sigma : R \to S$ is a morphism, then $\sigma$ lifts to
a morphism $W(\sigma) = : \sigma : W(R) \to W(S)$. Particularly, all Witt ring admits a lift of
Frobenius $\sigma$!

Examples:
(i) $W(F_p) = \mathbb{Z}_p$;
(ii) If $k$ is a finite field, then $W(k)$ is the ring of integers of the unique unramified
extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p$ whose residue field is $k$. Consequently,
(iii) $W(F_p) = \mathbb{O}^{un}_p$ is the ring of integers of the $p$-adic completion of the maximal
unramified extension $\mathbb{Q}^{un}_p$ of $\mathbb{Q}_p$.

For $x = x_0 \in R$, since $R$ is perfect, it makes sense to talk about $x^{p^n}$ in $R$ for all $n$.
(This is in fact the key condition for a field to be perfect.) Up to $W(R)$, choose then an
element $\overline{x}_n \in W(R)$ such that its residue class coincides with $x^{p^n}$. Then the sequence
$\{\overline{x}_n\}_{n \geq 0}$ converges in $W(R)$, say, to an element $[x]$. This $[x]$ is known to depend only
on $x$, not on the choices of $\overline{x}_n$. As such, we obtain a multiplicative map, the so-called
Teichmüller lift:

\[ [\cdot] : R \to W(R) \quad x \mapsto [x]. \]

Clearly,
(i) the Teichmüller lift is a special section to the natural reduction map;
(ii) every element $x \in W(R)$ can be written uniquely as $x = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p^n [x_n]$ wth $x_n \in R$.
Moreover,
(iii) there exist universal homogeneous polynomials $S_n, P_n \in \mathbb{Z}[X_i^{p^n}, Y_i^{p^n} : i = 0, 1, \ldots, n]$ of degree 1 (where $\deg X_i := 1 =: \deg Y_i$) such
that for all $x, y \in W(R)$, we have

\[ x + y = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p^n [S_n(x_0, y_0, \ldots, x_n, y_n)] \]

\[ xy = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p^n [P_n(x_0, y_0, \ldots, x_n, y_n)]. \]
For instance,

\[ S_0(X_0, Y_0) := X_0 + Y_0; \]
\[ S_1(X_0, Y_0, X_1, Y_1) := X_1 + Y_1 + p^{-1} (X_0^{1/p} + Y_0^{1/p})^p - X_0 - Y_0 \]

Indeed, with the help of the polynomials \( S \) and \( P \), we can construct \( W(R) \) by setting
(a) as a set, \( W(R) := \prod_{n=0}^{\infty} R \), and
(b) for the ring structure, set the addition and the multiplication according to the above relations (*).

Furthermore, the concept of Witt ring can be extended to the case when \( R \) is not perfect. In this later case, we call the result ring a Cohen ring \( C(R) \). Cohen rings are not really unique, but still they are of characteristic zero with residual ring \( C(R) / pC(R) = R \). For example, \( C[\mathbb{F}_p[[X]]] = \mathbb{Z}_p[[X]] \).

26.2 \( p \)-adic Representations of Fields of Characteristic 0

26.2.1 Lift of base fields

Let \( \mathbb{E}_K \subset \overline{\mathbb{E}} \) be the field isomorphic to the field of norms \( \mathcal{N}_K \) introduced before. It is of characteristic \( p \) and may not be perfect. Denote its associated Cohen ring \( C(\mathbb{E}_K) \) by \( O_{\mathbb{E}_K} \) and write \( \mathcal{E}_K \) the associated fraction field which is of characteristic 0. Denote by \( \varphi : \mathcal{E}_K \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_K \) a lift of the Frobenius \( \sigma: \mathbb{E}_K \rightarrow \mathbb{E}_K \). Consequently,
\[ O_{\mathbb{E}_K} = \lim_{\leftarrow} O_{\mathbb{E}_K}/p^nO_{\mathbb{E}_K}, \quad O_{\mathbb{E}_K}/pO_{\mathbb{E}_K} = \mathbb{E}_K \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{E}_K = O_{\mathbb{E}_K} \left\{ \frac{1}{p} \right\}. \]

Let \( \mathcal{F} \) be a finite extension of \( \mathcal{E}_K \) and \( O_{\mathcal{F}} \) be the ring of integers. We say that \( \mathcal{F}/\mathcal{E}_K \) is unramified if
(i) \( p \) is a generator of the maximal ideal of \( O_{\mathcal{F}} \); and
(ii) \( F = \overline{\mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{F}}} \) is a separable extension of \( \mathbb{E}_K \).

For any finite separable extension \( F \) of \( \mathbb{E}_K \), the inclusion \( \mathbb{E}_K \hookrightarrow F \) induces a local homomorphism \( C(\mathbb{E}_K) \rightarrow C(F) \) through which we may identify \( C(\mathbb{E}_K) \) and a subring of \( C(F) \) and \( FrC(F) \) as a field extension of \( FrC(\mathbb{E}_K) \), which in particular is unramified. Much more is correct: By the field of norms, all finite unramified extensions of \( \mathcal{E}_K \) are obtained in this way. If we let \( \mathcal{E}_u := \lim_{\rightarrow} F \) and let \( \widehat{\mathcal{E}_u} \) be the \( p \)-adic completion of \( \mathcal{E}_u \) with \( O_{\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u}} \) its ring of integers, then \( O_{\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u}} \) is a local ring and
\[ O_{\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u}} = \lim_{\leftarrow} O_{\mathcal{E}_u}/p^nO_{\mathcal{E}_u}. \]

Clearly, all are equipped with Frobenious \( \varphi \) which commute with the natural action of \( H_K \). Moreover, one checks directly the following holds:
(i) \( (\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u})^H_K = \mathbb{E}_K, \quad (O_{\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u}})^H_K = O_{\mathbb{E}_K}; \)
(ii) \( (\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u})^{\varphi=1} = \mathbb{Q}_p, \quad (O_{\widehat{\mathcal{E}_u}})^{\varphi=1} = \mathbb{Z}_p. \)
26.2.2 $p$-adic Representations

For simplicity, write $E$ for $E_K$. We say that a $\varphi$-module $M$ over $E$ is a finite dimensional $E$-vector space equipped with a $\sigma$-semi-linear morphism $\varphi : M \to M$, and a $\varphi$-module is called etale if $M = \mathcal{E} \cdot \varphi(M)$. One can easily check that for a $p$-adic representation $V$ of $H_K$,

$$D(V) := \left( \hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{H_K}$$

is an etale $\varphi$-module over $E$ such that the natural map

$$\hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_E D(V) \to \hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_{Q_p} V$$

is a $H_K$-equivariant isomorphism.

26.3 $p$-adic Representations and Etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-Modules

Let $V$ be a $\mathbb{Q}_p$-representation of $G_K$, set

$$D(V) := \left( \hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{H_K},$$

then $D(V)$ admits natural $\Gamma_K$-actions. We say that $D$ is a $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module over $O_E$ (resp. over $E$) if it a $\varphi$-module over $O_E$ (resp. over $E$) together with a $\sigma$-semi-linear action of $\Gamma_K$ commuting with $\varphi$. Moreover, $D$ is called etale if it is an etale $\varphi$-module and the action of $\Gamma_K$ is continuous.

Denote by $\text{Rep}_{\mathbb{Q}_p}(G_K)$ the category of $p$-adic representations of $G_K$ and $\mathcal{M}_{\varphi, 1}^{\text{et}}(E)$ the category of etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-modules over $E$. Then we have the following

**Corollary.** (Fontaine) The natural functor

$$\mathbb{D} : \text{Rep}_{\mathbb{Q}_p}(G_K) \to \mathcal{M}_{\varphi, 1}^{\text{et}}(E)$$

$$V \mapsto D(V) := \left( \hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{H_K}$$

gives an equivalence of categories and its quasi-inverse is given by

$$\mathbb{V} : \mathcal{M}_{\varphi, 1}^{\text{et}}(E) \to \text{Rep}_{\mathbb{Q}_p}(G_K)$$

$$M \mapsto \mathbb{V}(M) := \left( \hat{E}^{ur} \otimes_{E} M \right)^{\varphi=1}.$$
Chapter XI. p-adic Hodge and Properties of Periods

To expose basic structures of $p$-adic Galois representations, we shift our attentions to the so-called $p$-adic Hodge theory, based on the following reason: etale cohomology not only offers natural examples of Galois representations, but provides all the fine structures which play key roles in the theory of $p$-adic Galois representations.

27 Hodge Theory over $\mathbb{C}$

Let $X$ be a projective smooth variety over a field $E$ of characteristic zero. Then we have the associated complex of sheaf of differential forms

$$\Omega_{X/E}^m : \mathcal{O}_{X/E} \rightarrow \Omega_{X/E}^1 \rightarrow \Omega_{X/E}^2 \rightarrow \cdots.$$  

By definition, the de Rham cohomology groups $H^m_{dR}(X/E)$ are the hyper-cohomology groups $H^m(\Omega_{X/E}^m)$ for all $m$.

On the other hand, for any embedding $E \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$, since $X(\mathbb{C})$ is a compact complex manifold, the singular cohomology $H^m(X(\mathbb{C}), \mathbb{Q})$, being the dual of $H_m(X(\mathbb{C}))$, is a finite dimensional $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space. The comparison theorem in the classical Hodge theory then says that there exists a canonical isomorphism

$$\mathbb{C} \otimes_\mathbb{Q} H^m(X(\mathbb{C}), \mathbb{Q}) \cong \mathbb{C} \otimes_E H^m_{dR}(X/E).$$

Thus without loss of generality, we may assume that $E$ is simply $\mathbb{C}$.

For a complex smooth projective variety $X$, denote by $A^n(X)$, resp. by $A^{p,q}(X)$, the space of $C^\infty$ $n$-forms, resp. $C^\infty$ $(p,q)$-forms. Clearly, $A^n(X) = \bigoplus_{p+q=n} A^{p,q}(X)$. With respect to the total differential operator $d : A^n(X) \rightarrow A^{n+1}(X)$, we have the cohomology groups

$$H^p(X) := \{ \phi \in A^{p,q}(X) : d\phi = 0 \} / dA^{p-1}(X) \cap A^{p,q}(X).$$

Then the Hodge decomposition theorem in the classical Hodge theory claims that there exists a canonical isomorphism

$$H^p_{dR}(X, \mathbb{C}) = \bigoplus_{p+q=n} H^{p,q}(X).$$

Furthermore, there is a decreasing filtration on $A^n(X)$ defined by

$$\text{Fil}^p A^n(X) := A^{n,0}(X) \oplus A^{n-1,1}(X) \oplus \cdots \oplus A^{p-n,p}(X)$$

and the induced decreasing filtration of $H^n_{dR}(X)$ defined by

$$\text{Fil}^p H^n_{dR}(X) := H^n(X) \oplus H^{n-1}(X) \oplus \cdots \oplus H^{p-n}(X).$$

Clearly,

$$\text{Fil}^p H^n_{dR}(X) = \{ \phi \in \text{Fil}^p A^n(X) : d\phi = 0 \} / dA^{p-1}(X) \cap \text{Fil}^p A^n(X),$$

$$H^{p,q}(X) = \text{Fil}^p H^n_{dR}(X) \cap \text{Fil}^q H^n_{dR}(X).$$
28 Admissible Galois Representations

Before we go to the essentials of \( p \)-adic Hodge theory, let us make a further preparation.

Let \( G \) be a topological group and \( B \) a topological commutative ring equipped with a continuous \( G \) action. Then by a \( B \)-representation \( V \) of \( G \), we mean a free \( B \)-module \( V \) of finite rank \( d \) together with a semi-linear and continuous action of \( G \). Such a representation is said to be trivial if there exists a basis of \( V \) consisting of only elements of \( V^G \), the invariants of \( V \) with respect to the action of \( G \).

Assume that \( E := B^G \) is a field and let \( F \) be a closed subfield of \( E \). Then \( B \) is called \((F, G)\)-regular if

1. \( B \) is a domain;
2. \( B^G = \text{Fr} B^G \), where the action of \( G \) on \( B \) extends naturally on its fraction field;
3. all elements \( \{ b \in B - \{0\} : \forall g \in G, \exists \lambda(g) \in F \text{ s.t. } g(b) = \lambda(g) \cdot b \} \) are invertible in \( B \).

Let \( V \) be a \( F \)-representation of \( G \). Set then \( D_B(V) := (B \otimes_F V)^G \). Accordingly, we have a natural \( B \)-linear and \( G \)-equivariant morphism

\[
\alpha_V : B \otimes_E D_B(V) \rightarrow B \otimes_F V \\
\lambda \otimes x \mapsto \lambda x.
\]

We say that \( V \) is \( B \)-admissible if \( B \otimes_F V \) is a trivial \( B \)-representation of \( G \).

Lemma. (See e.g., [FO]) Assume \( B \) is \((F, G)\)-regular and let \( V \) be a \( F \)-representation of \( G \). Then

1. The map \( \alpha_V \) is injective and \( \dim_E D_B(V) \leq \dim_F V \);

2. The following things are equivalent:
   1. \( V \) is \( B \)-admissible;
   2. \( \dim_E D_B(V) = \dim_F V \);
   3. \( \alpha_V \) is an isomorphism.

29 Basic Properties of Various Periods

With the above discussion and the \( p \)-adic Hodge structures (to be stated below) in mind, we then can summarize the essential properties of various \( p \)-adic periods rings. Our treatment follows [Tsu2].

29.1 Hodge-Tate Periods

Define the ring of Hodge-Tate periods to be the graded ring

\[
\mathbb{B}_{HT} := \bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{B}_{HT}^i
\]
where,

(i) the $i$-th piece is given by $B^i_{HT} := \mathbb{C}(i)$; and

(ii) the ring structure is given by the natural multiplication

\[ \mathbb{C}(i) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathbb{C}(j) \to \mathbb{C}(i + j). \]

### 29.2 de Rham Periods

Fix a $p$-adic number field $K$. Denote by $B_{\text{dr}}$ the ring of de Rham periods.

#### Basic Properties of $B_{\text{dr}}$:

(i) $B_{\text{dr}}$ is a complete discrete valuation field with $\mathbb{C}_p$ its residue field;

(ii) $B_{\text{dr}}$ admits a natural decreasing filtration

\[ \text{Fil}^i_{HT} B_{\text{dr}} := \{ x \in B_{\text{dr}} : \nu(x) \geq i \} \]

reflecting the structure of Hodge filtration. Here we have normalized the valuation so that $\nu(B^*_d R) = \mathbb{Z}$;

(iii) $B_{\text{dr}}$ admits a natural $G_K$ action which not only preserves the above filtration, but is compatible with the natural induced projection $\text{Fil}^i_0 B_{\text{dr}} \to \mathbb{C}$;

(iv) $B_{\text{dr}}$ satisfies the following additional fine structures/properties:

1. There is a natural $G_K$-equivariant embedding

\[ P_0 := K'_0 \otimes_{K_0} \overline{K} \hookrightarrow O_{B_{\text{dr}}} =: B^+_{\text{dr}} \]

such that its composition with the residue map $B^+_{\text{dr}} \to \mathbb{C}$ coincides with the natural embedding $K'_0 \otimes_{K_0} \overline{K} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{C}$;

2. There is a natural $G_K$-equivariant injection $\mathbb{Q}_p(i) \hookrightarrow \text{Fil}^i B_{\text{dr}}$ such that one (and hence all) $a \in \mathbb{Q}_p(1), a \neq 0$, maps into a prime element of $B_{\text{dr}}$. In particular,

2.1. $B_{\text{dr}}$ there are natural $G_K$-equivariant injections $\mathbb{Q}_p(i) \hookrightarrow \text{Fil}^i B_{\text{dr}}$;

2.2. there are natural $G_K$-equivariant isomorphisms

\[ \mathbb{C}(i) \cong \text{Gr}^i_{HT} B_{\text{dr}} := \text{Fil}^i_{HT} B_{\text{dr}} / \text{Fil}^{i+1}_{HT} B_{\text{dr}}; \]

3. $B_{\text{dr}}^{G_K} = K$.

It appears that $B_{\text{dr}}$ depends on $K$. For this, we have

(v) If $L/K$ is a finite Galois extension contained in $\overline{K}/K$, then

\[ \left( B_{\text{dr}}(L), G_L \right) \cong \left( B_{\text{dr}}(K), G_L \cap G_K \right). \]

That is to say, $B_{\text{dr}}(L)$ together with its Galois action $G_L$ coincides with $B_{\text{dr}}(K)$ associated to $K$ together with the induced action of $G_L$ as the restriction from $G_K$ to its subgroup $G_L$.

### 29.3 Crystalline Periods

Denote by $B_{\text{crys}}$ the ring of crystalline periods.

#### Basic Properties of $B_{\text{crys}}$:

(i) $B_{\text{crys}}$ is a $G_K$-stable subring of $B_{\text{dr}}$ such that the induced decreasing filtration

$\text{Fil}^i B_{\text{crys}} := B_{\text{crys}} \cap \text{Fil}^i B_{\text{dr}}$ has the same graded pieces $\mathbb{C}(i)$;

(ii) $B_{\text{crys}}$ satisfies the following additional structures/properties:
Basic Properties of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$:

(i) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ may be understood as a $G_K$-stable subring of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$. However, different from $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$, such an embedding of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ in $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$ depends on the choices of prime element $\pi$ of $K$.

(ii) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ satisfies the following additional structures/properties:

(1) Corresponding to a systematic choice of $p^n$-th root of $\pi$ in $\overline{K}$: $s = (s_n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$, $s_0 = \pi$, $s_{n+1} = s_n$, there is a natural element $u_s \in \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ such that

(1.1) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} = \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}[u_s]$;

(1.2) $\forall g \in G_K$, $g(u_s) = u_{g(s)}$, where $g(s) = (g(s_n))_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$;

(1.3) If $s' = (s'_n)$ is another choice, then $u_{s'} = u_s + t$, where $(s'_n s^{-1}_n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} = t \in \mathbb{Q}_p(1) \subset \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$;

(2) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ admits a natural $G_K$-equivariant Frobenius $\varphi(u_s) = p \cdot u_s$ extending the Frobenius $\varphi$ on $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$;

(3) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ admits a natural monodromy operator $N : \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} \rightarrow \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ satisfying

(3.1) $N$ is a $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$-derivation and $N(u_s) = 1$;

(3.2) $N\varphi = p\varphi N$;

(3.3) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{N=0} = \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$; and

(3.4) $\text{Fil}^0\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}} \cap \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{N=0, p=1} = \mathbb{Q}_p$;

(4) The natural map $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} \rightarrow \mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$ is injective; and

(5) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{\text{G}_K} = K_0$;

(6) All one dimensional $G_K$-stable $\mathbb{Q}_p$-vector subspaces of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ are contained in $P_0 \cdot \mathbb{Q}_p(i), i \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Similarly,

(iii) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(L)$ is a finite Galois extension contained in $\overline{K}/K$, then

$$\left(\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(L), G_L, e(L/K)^{-1}N\right) \approx \left(\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(K), G_L(\subset G_K), N\right).$$

Here $e(L/K)$ denotes the ramification index of the extension $L/K$.

29.4 Semi-Stable Periods

Denote by $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ the ring of semi-stable periods.

Basic Properties of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$:

(i) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ may be understood as a $G_K$-stable subring of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$. However, different from $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$, such an embedding of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ in $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$ depends on the choices of prime element $\pi$ of $K$.

(ii) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ satisfies the following additional structures/properties:

(1) Corresponding to a systematic choice of $p^n$-th root of $\pi$ in $\overline{K}$: $s = (s_n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$, $s_0 = \pi$, $s_{n+1} = s_n$, there is a natural element $u_s \in \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ such that

(1.1) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} = \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}[u_s]$;

(1.2) $\forall g \in G_K$, $g(u_s) = u_{g(s)}$, where $g(s) = (g(s_n))_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$;

(1.3) If $s' = (s'_n)$ is another choice, then $u_{s'} = u_s + t$, where $(s'_n s^{-1}_n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} = t \in \mathbb{Q}_p(1) \subset \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$;

(2) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ admits a natural $G_K$-equivariant Frobenius $\varphi(u_s) = p \cdot u_s$ extending the Frobenius $\varphi$ on $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$;

(3) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ admits a natural monodromy operator $N : \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} \rightarrow \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ satisfying

(3.1) $N$ is a $\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$-derivation and $N(u_s) = 1$;

(3.2) $N\varphi = p\varphi N$;

(3.3) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{N=0} = \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}$; and

(3.4) $\text{Fil}^0\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}} \cap \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{N=0, p=1} = \mathbb{Q}_p$;

(4) The natural map $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{B}_{\text{st}} \rightarrow \mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$ is injective; and

(5) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}^{\text{G}_K} = K_0$;

(6) All one dimensional $G_K$-stable $\mathbb{Q}_p$-vector subspaces of $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}$ are contained in $P_0 \cdot \mathbb{Q}_p(i), i \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Similarly,

(iii) $\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(L)$ is a finite Galois extension contained in $\overline{K}/K$, then

$$\left(\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(L), G_L, e(L/K)^{-1}N\right) \approx \left(\mathbb{B}_{\text{st}}(K), G_L(\subset G_K), N\right).$$

Here $e(L/K)$ denotes the ramification index of the extension $L/K$.
30  Hodge-Tate, de Rham, Semi-Stable and Crystalline Reps

30.1 Definition

Let $V$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$, and let

$$D_\bullet(V) := \left( B_\bullet \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{G_K}$$

where $\bullet$ is the running symbol for HT, dR, st, crys, and $G_K$ acts on $B_\bullet \otimes_{Q_p} V$ via diagonal action of $G_K$. Clearly, from the natural structure of the ring of periods, there is an induced structure on $D_\bullet(V)$. In particular, since

$$C_{G_K} = B_{HT}^{G_K} = B_{dR}^{G_K} = K, \quad \text{and} \quad B_{st}^{G_K} = B_{crys}^{G_K} = K_0,$$

(i) $D_{HT}(V), D_{dR}(V)$ are $K$-vector spaces; and

(ii) $D_{st}(V), D_{crys}(V)$ are $K_0$-vector spaces.

One checks easily that $B_\bullet$ is $(B_\bullet^{G_K}, G_K)$-regular. Accordingly, following Fontaine, we call a $p$-adic Galois representation $V$ of $G_K$ a $\bullet$-representation, where $\bullet$=Hodge-Tate, de Rham, semi-stable, crystalline, if $V$ is $B_\bullet$-admissible, that is to say, if

$$\dim_{B_\bullet} D_\bullet(V) = \dim_{Q_p}(V).$$

30.2 Basic Structures of $D_\bullet(V)$

Induced from Fontaine’s rings of various periods, there are natural structures on the space $D_\bullet(V)$ associated to a $p$-adic Galois representation $V$ of $G_K$.

- **Hodge-Tate**: The graded structure on $B_{HT}$ induces a natural graded structure on $K$-vector space $D_{HT}(V)$. More precisely,

$$D_{HT}(V) = \bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} D^i_{HT}(V) \quad \text{where} \quad D^i_{HT}(V) := \left( C(i) \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{G_K}.$$

- **de Rham**: The decreasing filtration structure on $B_{dR}$ induces a natural decreasing filtration of $K$-vector subspaces on $D_{dR}(V)$. More precisely,

$$\text{Fil}_{HT} D^i_{dR}(V) := \left( \text{Fil}_{HT} B_{dR} \otimes_{Q_p} V \right)^{G_K}.$$

This filtration is exhaustive and separated, that is, we have

$$\bigcup_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \text{Fil}_{HT} D^i_{dR}(V) = D_{dR}(V) \quad \text{and} \quad \bigcap_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \text{Fil}_{HT} D^i_{dR}(V) = 0.$$

Moreover, by (2.2)$_{dR}$, we have the following natural injection of $K$-vector spaces

$$\text{Gr}_{HT} D_{dR}(V) := \bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \text{Fil}_{HT} D^i_{dR}(V)/\text{Fil}_{HT}^{i+1} D_{dR}(V) \hookrightarrow D_{HT}(V). \quad (\ast)$$
• Semi-Stable: By (4)$_{st}$, we have a non-canonical embedding of $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{B}_{st} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{B}_{dR}$, and hence a natural inclusion
\[ K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{st}(V) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{D}_{dR}(V). \tag{**} \]
Consequently, there is a natural decreasing filtration by $K$-vector subspaces on $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{st}(V)$. Moreover, from the Frobenius structure $\varphi$ and monodromy operator $N$ on $\mathbb{B}_{st}$, we get a natural Frobenius structure $\varphi : \mathbb{D}_{st}(V) \rightarrow \mathbb{D}_{st}(V)$ and a monodromy operator $N : \mathbb{D}_{st}(V) \rightarrow \mathbb{D}_{st}(V)$ which are all $K_0$-linear and satisfy the relation
\[ N\varphi = p \cdot \varphi N. \]

• Crystalline: By (2)$_{crys}$, we have a canonical embedding $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{B}_{crys} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{B}_{dR}$, and hence a natural inclusion
\[ K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{D}_{dR}(V). \tag{*3} \]
Consequently, there is a natural decreasing filtration by $K$-vector subspaces on $K \otimes_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V)$. Moreover, from the Frobenius structure $\varphi$ on $\mathbb{B}_{crys}$, we get a natural Frobenius $\varphi : \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V) \rightarrow \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V)$ which is $K_0$-linear.

Finally, by (3.3)$_{st}$, we have $\mathbb{B}_{st}^{N=0} = \mathbb{B}_{crys}$ and hence
\[ \mathbb{D}_{st}(V)^{N=0} = \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V). \tag{*4} \]

30.3 Relations among Various $p$-adic Representations

Let $V$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$. Then from Lemma in §28, (*, **, *3, *4), and the fact that the natural $\mathbb{C}$-linear morphism
\[ \bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C}(-i) \otimes_K \left( \mathbb{C}(i) \otimes_K V \right)^{G_K} \twoheadrightarrow \mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \]
is an injection, we obtain the following inequalities:
\[ \dim_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{crys}(V) \leq \dim_{K_0} \mathbb{D}_{st}(V) \leq \dim_{K} \mathbb{D}_{dR}(V) \leq \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V. \]

Consequently,
(i) $\mathbb{D}_{st}(V)$ are all finite dimensional $\mathbb{B}_{st}$-vector spaces;
(ii) $\varphi$, whenever makes sense, is an isomorphism; and most importantly,
(iii) there are simple implications that
\[ \text{crystalline} \Rightarrow \text{semi stable} \Rightarrow \text{de Rham} \Rightarrow \text{Hodge Tate}. \]
Proposition. (Fontaine) Let $V$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$. Use $\bullet$ as the running symbol for HT, $dR$, st, crys. Then

1) the natural $\mathbb{B}_\bullet$-linear map

$$
\mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_{G_K}} D_\bullet(V) \hookrightarrow \mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V
$$

is a $G_K$-equivariant morphism which preserves the grads, where

(i) $G_K$ acts on the left hand side via the action on $\mathbb{B}_\bullet$ and on the right hand side via the diagonal one; and

(ii) the graded structures are given on the left hand side by

$$
\sum_{i=k+1} \text{Fil}^i \mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes \text{Fil}^0 D_i(V)
$$

and on the right hand by $\text{Fil}^i \mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes \mathbb{Q}_p V$;

2) If $V$ is $\bullet$-admissible, then the $\mathbb{B}_\bullet$-linear map

$$
\mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_{G_K}} D_\bullet(V) \rightarrow \mathbb{B}_\bullet \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V
$$

is an isomorphism; Moreover,

3) (i) If $V$ is of Hodge-Tate, then by considering the degree zero parts, we get a natural isomorphism, the so-called Hodge-Tate decomposition,

$$
\bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C}(-i) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} D_{HT}^i(V) \simeq \mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V;
$$

(ii) If $V$ is semi-stable, then the natural $\mathbb{B}_{st}$-linear map

$$
\mathbb{B}_{st} \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_{G_K}} D_{st}(V) \simeq \mathbb{B}_{st} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V
$$

commutes with $\varphi$ and $N$;

(iii) If $V$ is crystalline, then the natural $\mathbb{B}_{crys}$-linear map

$$
\mathbb{B}_{crys} \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_{G_K}} D_{crys}(V) \simeq \mathbb{B}_{crys} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V
$$

commutes with $\varphi$.

30.4 Examples

1) Tate Twist: $\mathbb{Q}_p(i)$ given by cyclotomic characters $\chi_{\text{cyclo}}^i$, $i \in \mathbb{Z}$. All are crystalline. Indeed, $D = D_{crys}(\mathbb{Q}_p(i)) = K_0 \cdot e$ with $e = r^{-i} \otimes t'$ and

$$
\varphi(e) = p^{-i} e, \quad \text{Fil}_{HT}^0 D = D, \quad \text{Fil}_{HT}^{i+1} D = 0.
$$

2) Unramified Representations: A unramified $p$-adic Galois representation, i.e., where the inertial group $I_K$ acts trivially, is crystalline. Moreover, a crystalline representation is unramified if and only if its associated Hodge-Tate filtration satisfies $\text{Fil}_{HT}^0 D_{\text{dR}}(V) = D_{\text{dR}}(V)$ and $\text{Fil}_{HT}^{i+1} D_{\text{dR}}(V) = 0$.

3) Semi-Stable Representations: All Tate modules $T_p(E)$ for Tate curves $E$ are semi-stable representations.
(4) **de Rham and Hodge–Tate Representations:**

(i) Extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p$ by $\mathbb{Q}_p(1)$ is de Rham, but

(ii) Non-trivial extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p(1)$ by $\mathbb{Q}_p$ is Hodge–Tate but not de Rham.

(5) **One Dimensional Galois Representations:** In this case, there are following equivalences

(i) Hodge–Tate $\iff$ de Rham $\iff$ There is an open subgroup $I_L$ of $I_K$ and an integer $i$ such that the induced action of $I_L$ on $V(-i)$ is trivial;

(ii) Semi-stable $\iff$ Crystalline $\iff$ the induced action of $I_K$ on $V(-i)$ is trivial.

(6) **Not Even Hodge–Tate:** $V$ is a two dimensional $\mathbb{Q}_p$-vector space equipped with an action of $G_K$ given by

$$
\begin{pmatrix}
1 & \log p \\
0 & 1
\end{pmatrix},
$$

By §45, the Sen operator $\Theta_V = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$, it is not of Hodge–Tate.

### 31 $p$-adic Hodge Theory

Fix a $p$-adic number field $K$ with absolute Galois group $G_K$.

**Theorem.** (*$p$-adic Hodge Theory*) Let $X$ be a $n$-dimensional proper regular variety defined over $K$. Denote by $(V := H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p), \rho_K)$ the induced representation of $G_K$, where $H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p)$ denotes the $m$-th $p$-adic etale cohomology group of $X$. Then the following conjectures hold:

- **Hodge–Tate**
  (i) The Galois representation $(H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p), \rho_K)$ is of Hodge–Tate type; and
  (ii) There is a natural graded preserved isomorphism
  $$
  \mathcal{D}_{HT}(H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p)) \cong \oplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} H^{m-i}(X, \Omega^i_{X/K}),
  $$
  and hence the following $G_K$-equivariant Hodge–Tate decomposition
  $$
  \mathcal{O} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p) = \oplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathcal{O} \otimes K H^{m-i}(X, \Omega^i_{X/K});
  $$

- **de Rham**
  (i) The Galois representation $(H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p), \rho_K)$ is of de Rham type. Moreover,
  (ii) $\mathcal{D}_{dr}(V)$ together with its associated Hodge filtration is isomorphic to the de Rham cohomology $H^m_{dR}(X_K/K)$ equipped with the Hodge filtration;

- **Semi-Stable**
  (i) If $X$ has a semi-stable reduction $(Y, D)$, then the Galois representation $(H^m_{et}(X_K, \mathbb{Q}_p), \rho_K)$ is semi-stable. Moreover,
  (ii) The associated filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module $\mathcal{D}_a(V)$ is canonically isomorphic to the following filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module on the log crystalline cohomology $H^m_{log}((Y, D)/K_0)$: Choose a semi-stable model $\overline{x} \to O_K$ of $X/K$ so that we obtain a log geometric structure $(Y, D)$ on the special fiber. Then induced from the log crystalline cohomology of the
special fiber; there is a natural weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module structure on \((\H^m_{\log}((Y, D)/K_0), \H^m_{\dR}(X_K/K))\):

- **Crystalline** (i) If \(X\) has a good reduction, the Galois representation \(\left(\H^m_{\et}(X_K, \Qp), \rho_K\right)\) is crystalline. Moreover,

  (ii) The filtered \(\varphi\)-module \(\mathbb{D}_{\text{crys}}(V)\) is canonically isomorphic to the following filtered \(\varphi\)-module on the crystalline cohomology \(\H^m_{\text{crys}}(Y/K_0)\): Choose a proper regular model \(X \to O_K\) of \(X/K\). Then induced from crystalline cohomology of the special fiber, there is a natural weakly admissible filtered \(\varphi\)-module structure on \(\left(\H^m_{\text{crys}}(Y/K_0), \H^m_{\dR}(X_K/K)\right)\).

The Hodge-Tate conjecture, due to mainly Tate, is a \(p\)-adic analogus of the standard Hodge theory for projective complex manifolds. This conjectures was solved by Tate for abelian varieties with good reduction, by Raynaud for all abelian varieties, by Bloch-Kato ([BK1]) for varieties with good reduction and finally by Faltings ([Fa1]) in general.

The de Rham conjecture and the crystalline conjecture are due to Fontaine ([Fon3]) and are solved by Fontaine-Messing ([FMel]) when \(K = K_0\), \(\dim X \leq p - 1\) and \(X\) has good reduction, and by Faltings ([Fa2]) in general. The above filtered \(\varphi\)-module structure on the de Rham cohomology is due to Berthelot-Ogus ([Ber1,2], [BO1,2]), and the independence issue for the filtered \(\varphi\)-structure on the de Rham cohomology on the model used is established by Gillet-Messing ([GM]).

The semi-stable conjecture is due to Fontaine and U. Jannsen ([Fo6]), solved by Fontaine for abelian varieties ([Fo6]), by Kato when \(\dim X \leq (p - 1)/2\) ([K]), by Tsuji ([Tsu1]), Niziol ([Ni1,2]) and Faltings ([Fa4]) independently in general. The above filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-structure on the de Rham cohomology is due to Hyodo-Kato ([HK]) and the independence of the model chosen can be established via de Jong’s alternation theory ([dJ]).
Chapter XII. Fontaine’s Rings of Periods

In this chapter, for completeness, we explain the essentials of various rings of periods following Fontaine (e.g. [FO]).

32 The Ring of de Rham Periods $\mathbb{B}_{dR}$

To have a reasonable theory of $p$-adic Galois representations, the standard $p$-adic cyclotomic character should be involved in a natural way. Accordingly, to construct the ring of good period $\mathbb{B}_*$, we need to find an element $t \in \mathbb{B}_*$ which is a period for the cyclotomic character. That is to say, there should be an element $t \in \mathbb{B}_*$ such that

$$g(t) = \chi_{\text{cycl}}(g) \cdot t \quad \text{for all } g \in G_K.$$

As a starting point, one may naively try $\mathbb{C}$. However it does not work since

$$\{ x \in \mathbb{C} : g(x) = \chi_{\text{cycl}}(g) \cdot x, \forall g \in G_K \} = \{0\}.$$

Thus we need to enlarge it. This then leads to the Tate module $\mathbb{Z}(1)$ and hence the ring of Hodge-Tate periods

$$\mathbb{B}_{HT} := \bigoplus_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathbb{C}(i),$$

which in a certain sense is the simplest ring of periods.

With the simplest one found, it is then very natural for us to seek a sort of ‘universal’ one. With the theory of field of norms, we are led to the Cohen ring $\mathbb{\tilde{A}}^+ := W(\mathbb{\tilde{E}}^+)$ associated to $\mathbb{\tilde{E}}^+$, or better, to its fractional field $\mathbb{\tilde{B}}^+ := \mathbb{\tilde{A}}^+[\frac{1}{p}]$. While this basically works, an essential modification should be made.

To be more precise, let $\varepsilon = (\varepsilon^{(0)}, \varepsilon^{(1)}) \in \mathbb{\tilde{E}}^+$ with $\varepsilon^{(0)} = 1$, $\varepsilon^{(1)} \neq 1$. Assume that

$$t := \log[\varepsilon] = -\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(1 - [\varepsilon])^n \varepsilon^n}{n}$$

makes sense. That is to say, assume that the infinite power series above converges. Then, formally, we have for all $g \in G_K$,

$$g(t) = g(\log[\varepsilon]) = \log \left( \left[ g(\varepsilon, \varepsilon^{(1)}, \ldots) \right] \right)$$

$$= \log \left( \left[ \varepsilon^{\chi_{\text{cycl}}(g)} \right] \right) = \chi_{\text{cycl}}(g) \cdot t.$$

In other words, whenever it makes sense, $t = \log[\varepsilon]$ is a cyclotomic period. Thus, we need to create a ring within which the above series defining $\log[\varepsilon]$ converges.

For the infinite series defining $\log[\varepsilon]$ to converge, it suffices to make $1 - [\varepsilon]$ small. However, in $\mathbb{\tilde{E}}^+$, we have

$$v_\mathbb{E}(\varepsilon - 1) = \lim_{n \to \infty} v_p(\varepsilon^{(n)} - 1)^p = \frac{p}{p - 1}.$$
In other words, within $\overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$, $\varepsilon - 1$ is not really very small. To overcome this difficulty, following Fontaine, we go as follows:

From the natural isomorphism $\mathbb{E} \cong \lim_{x \to x_d^p} O_C/pO_C$, we obtain an induced homomorphism

$$\theta : \mathbb{E} \to O_C/pO_C$$

$$\langle x^{(n)} \rangle \mapsto x^{(0)}.$$

Lift this construction to the characteristic zero world. Since

$$\overline{\mathbb{E}}^+ := \mathbb{A}^1[p] := \left\{ \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} p^k [x_k] : x_k \in \overline{\mathbb{E}}^+ \right\}$$

where $[x] \in \mathbb{A}^+$ denotes the Teichmüller lift of $x \in \overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$, we obtain a natural morphism, a lift of $\theta$,

$$\theta : \overline{\mathbb{E}}^+ \to \mathbb{C}$$

$$\sum p^k [x_k] \mapsto \sum p^k x_k^{(0)}.$$

(Here we have used the isomorphism

$$\overline{\mathbb{E}}^+ \cong \lim_{x \to x_d^p} O_C/pO_C \cong \lim_{x \to x_d^p} O_C,$$

namely, a shift from $O_C/pO_C$ a characteristic $p$ one to $O_C$ a characteristic zero world, so that elements $x$ take the forms $x = (x^{(n)})$ with $x^{(n)} \in O_C$.)

Recall that $\varepsilon = (\varepsilon^{(n)}) \in \overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$ with $\varepsilon^{(0)} = 1$, $\varepsilon^{(0)} \neq 1$. Set

$$\varepsilon_1 := \varepsilon^{p} = (\varepsilon^{(1)}, \varepsilon^{(2)}, \ldots) \in \overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$$

and

$$\omega := \frac{[\varepsilon] - 1}{[\varepsilon_1] - 1}.$$

Then $\theta(\omega) = 1 + \varepsilon^{(1)} + \cdots + (\varepsilon^{(1)})^{p-1} = 0$. In other words, $\langle \omega \rangle \subset \text{Ker}(\theta)$.

**Lemma.** (Fontaine) $\text{Ker}(\theta) = \langle \omega \rangle$.

**Proof.** Obviously, $\text{Ker}(\theta)$ is an ideal of $\overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$ whose elements satisfying $v_\mathbb{E}(x) \geq 1$. Note that $\omega \in \text{Ker}(\theta)$ with its modulo $p$ reduction $\overline{\omega}$ satisfies $v_\mathbb{E}(\overline{\omega}) = 1$. Thus the natural injection map $\langle \omega \rangle \to \text{Ker}(\theta)$ is surjective modulo $p$. Since both sides are complete for the $p$-adic topology, this has to be an isomorphism.

Note that in particular $\theta([\varepsilon] - 1) = 0$ i.e., $[\varepsilon] - 1 \in \text{Ker}(\theta) = \langle \omega \rangle$. Thus in order to make $[\varepsilon] - 1$ small, it suffices to introduce the $\text{Ker}(\theta)$-adic, or the same $\omega$-adic, topology. Accordingly, let

$$\mathbb{B}^+_{dR} := \lim_{x \to x_d^p}(\text{Ker}(\theta))^p,$$

namely, define $\mathbb{B}^+_{dR}$ to be the ring obtained by completing $\overline{\mathbb{E}}^+$ with respect to the $\text{Ker}(\theta)$-adic topology.

Clearly, $t = \log([\varepsilon]) \in \mathbb{B}^+_{dR}$. Indeed, we have the follows.

**Lemma.** (Fontaine) (1) $\mathbb{B}^+_{dR} := \mathbb{B}^+_{dR}[\frac{1}{t}]$ is a field;

(2) There is a natural filtration $\overline{\text{Gr}}_{HT}^i \mathbb{B}^+_{dR} = t^i \mathbb{B}^+_{dR}$ such that

$$\overline{\text{Gr}}_{HT}^i \mathbb{B}^+_{dR} \cong \mathbb{B}^+_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathbb{C}(i);$$

(3) There is a natural $G_K$ action on $\mathbb{B}^+_{dR}$ with $\mathbb{B}^+_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathbb{C}(i)$.

(79)
33 The Ring of Crystalline Periods $B_{\text{crys}}$

The point here is to create a subring $B_{\text{crys}}$ of $B_{\text{dr}}$ which contains the cyclotomic period $t$ and is equipped with a natural Frobenius structure. Its construction is essentially based on the following two relations:

1. $\varphi(t) = \log([e^p]) = \log([e]^p) = p \log([e]) = p \cdot t$, and
2. $\varphi(\text{Ker}(\theta) + p \cdot W(\mathbb{E}^+)) \subset \text{Ker}(\theta) + p \cdot W(\mathbb{E}^+)$.

Indeed, in order to have $t \in B_{\text{crys}}$, we need to analyze the terms $\frac{([e]-1)^p}{n}$ appeared in the defining series of $t = \log([e])$. Note that

$$\frac{([e]-1)^p}{n} = (n-1)!([e_1]-1)^n \omega_n^p/n!.$$  

Since, (i) $p$-adically, $(n-1)! \to 0$, and (ii) both $[e_1]-1$ and $\varphi([e_1]-1)$ are in $W(\mathbb{E}^+)$, we need to understand how all $\varphi\left(\frac{[e]}{n}\right)$ behave.

For this, recall that on $W(\mathbb{E}^+)$, we have a Frobenius map

$$\varphi : (a_0, a_1, \ldots, a_n, \ldots) \mapsto (a_0^p, a_1^p, \ldots, a_n^p, \ldots).$$

So, for all $b \in W(\mathbb{E}^+)$, $\varphi(b) \equiv b^p \mod p$. In particular,

$$\varphi(\omega) = \omega^p + p\eta = p\eta + (p-1)\left(\frac{\omega^p}{p!}\right)$$

for a certain $\eta \in W(\mathbb{E}^+)$. Consequently,

$$\varphi\left(\frac{\omega^m}{m!}\right) = \frac{p^m}{m!} \left(\eta + (p-1)\left(\frac{\omega^p}{p!}\right)^m\right)$$

which are contained in $W(\mathbb{E}^+)\left[\frac{\omega}{n}\right]$. All this then leads to the following constructions:

1. Starting from $A_{\text{crys}}^* = W(\mathbb{E}^*)$, we introduce the ring $A_{\text{crys}}^0$ by adding all elements $\frac{\omega^m}{m!}$ for $a \in \text{Ker}(\theta)$, the so-called divided power envelope of $A_{\text{crys}}^* = W(\mathbb{E}^*)$ with respect to $\text{Ker}(\theta)$;
2. To make $(n-1)!$ small, we need to use $p$-adic topology and hence to obtain the ring

$$A_{\text{crys}} := \lim_{\varphi_n} A_{\text{crys}}^0/p^n A_{\text{crys}}^0 = \left\{ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n \frac{\omega^p}{n!} : a_n \to 0 \text{ $p$-adically in } W(\mathbb{E}^+)\right\};$$

3. By inverting $p$, we get

$$B_{\text{crys}}^+ := A_{\text{crys}}\left[\frac{1}{p}\right] = \left\{ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n \frac{\omega^p}{n!} : a_n \to 0 \text{ $p$-adically in } W(\mathbb{E}^+)\left[\frac{1}{p}\right]\right\}. $$

Clearly, $B_{\text{crys}}^+$ contains $t$ and is naturally contained in $B_{\text{dr}}^+$; (Indeed, we have

$$B_{\text{crys}}^+ = \left\{ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n \frac{\omega^p}{n!} \in B_{\text{dr}} : a_n \to 0 \text{ in } W(\mathbb{E}^+)\left[\frac{1}{p}\right]\right\}.$$  

80
(4) Finally, define the ring of crystalline periods by \( B_{\text{crs}} := B_{\text{crs}}^+[\frac{1}{\mathfrak{p}}] \) with the extension of Frobenius via \( \varphi(\frac{1}{\mathfrak{p}}) := \frac{1}{\mathfrak{p}} \).

Remark. The domain \( B_{\text{crs}} \) is not a field. For example, \( \omega - \mathfrak{p} \) is in \( B_{\text{crs}} \setminus B_{\text{crs}}^* \).

34 The Ring of Semi-Stable Periods \( B_{\text{st}} \)

Since for semi-stable periods, \( B_{\text{st}}^{N=0} = B_{\text{crs}} \), a natural way to construct \( B_{\text{st}} \) is to enlarge \( B_{\text{crs}} \). For this purpose, motivated by analysis, we may simply try to find a transcendental element \( T \) over \( B_{\text{crs}} \), or better, over its fraction field \( C_{\text{crs}} := \text{Fr} B_{\text{crs}} \), such that

\[
\begin{align*}
(1) & \quad \varphi(T) = pT; \\
(2) & \quad N(T) = 1, \text{ which implies } N(\sum a_n T^n) = \sum n a_n T^{n-1} \text{ for all } a_n \in C_{\text{crs}}; \text{ and} \\
(3) & \quad \text{There is a natural action of } G_K \text{ on } T \text{ which commutes with the operators } \varphi \text{ and } N.
\end{align*}
\]

That is to say, for all \( g \in G_K \),

\[
\begin{align*}
g(\varphi(T)) &= \varphi(g(T)) \quad \text{and} \quad g(N(T)) = N(g(T)).
\end{align*}
\]

This, by (1) and (2), shows that, for all \( g \in G_K \),

\[
\begin{align*}
\varphi(g(T)) &= p \cdot g(T) \quad \text{and} \quad N(g(T)) = 1.
\end{align*}
\]

Consequently, if such a \( T \) exists, \( g(T) \) should satisfy an additive relation

\[
g(T) = T + \eta(g)
\]

for a certain \( \eta(g) \in B_{\text{crs}} \) such that \( \varphi(\eta(g)) = p \cdot \eta(g) \). A good choice of \( \eta(g) \) is \( \chi_{\text{cycl}}(g) \cdot T \).

This then leads to finding an element \( T \in B_{\text{dr}} \) such that

(i) \( T \) is transcendental over \( B_{\text{crs}} \);
(ii) \( \varphi(T) = pT \); and
(iii) \( g(T) = T + \chi_{\text{cycl}}(g) \cdot T \) for all \( g \in G_K \).

From our experience, a natural way to obtain transcendental element is via logarithmic map. Thus, by applying the exponential map, we must find an element \( \bar{\sigma} \in \mathbb{B}^+ \) satisfying the multiplicative relation

\[
g(\bar{\sigma}) = \bar{\sigma} \cdot e^{\chi_{\text{cycl}}(g)}.
\]

But this is relatively easy since the element \( \bar{\sigma} := (\bar{\sigma}^{(n)}) \in \mathbb{B}_+^+ \) with \( \bar{\sigma}^{(0)} = p \) does the job. Indeed, \( \theta(\frac{\log p}{p} - 1) = \frac{p}{p} - 1 = 0 \). Thus

\[
\log[\bar{\sigma}] := \log\left(\frac{[\bar{\sigma}]}{p}\right) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^{n+1} \frac{(\log p - 1)^n}{n} = -\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\bar{\sigma}^n}{n p^n},
\]

which is clearly convergent in \( B_{\text{dr}} \). As a by-product, this also offers us a (non-canonical) embedding

\[
B_{\text{st}} := B_{\text{crs}}[\log[\bar{\sigma}]] \hookrightarrow B_{\text{dr}}.
\]
Chapter XIII. Micro Reciprocity Laws and General CFT

35 Filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-Modules and Semi-Stable Reps

35.1 Definition

Let \(\rho : G_K \to GL(V)\) be a \(p\)-adic Galois representation. Following Fontaine, define the associated spaces of periods by

\[
D_{HT}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{HT} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G,
D_{dR}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G,
D_{st}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{st} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G,
D_{crys}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{crys} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G.
\]

Then by the properties of corresponding rings of periods \(\mathbb{B}_{\bullet}\), we know that \(D_{HT}(V)\) (resp. \(D_{dR}(V)\), resp. \(D_{st}(V)\), resp. \(D_{crys}(V)\)) is finite dimensional \(K\) (resp. \(K\), resp. \(K_0\), resp. \(K_0\))-vector space. Moreover, it is known that

1. the following inequalities hold:

\[
\dim_{K_0} D_{crys}(V) \leq \dim_{K_0} D_{st}(V) \leq \dim_{K_0} D_{dR}(V) \leq \dim_{K_0} D_{HT}(V) \leq \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p}(V);
\]

2. Refined structures on the rings of periods \(\mathbb{B}_{\bullet}\), where \(\bullet = HT, dR, st, crys\), naturally induce additional structures on \(D_{\bullet}(V)\) as well. More precisely,

- **Hodge-Tate** On \(D := D_{HT}(V)\), there is a natural filtration structure, the *Hodge-Tate filtration*, given by

\[
\text{Fil}^i_{HT} D_{HT}(V) := \left( \text{Fil}^i_{HT} \mathbb{B}_{HT} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G.
\]

This is a decreasing filtration by \(K\)-vector subspaces on \(D_{HT}(V)\). Define then the associated graded piece by

\[
\text{Gr}^i_{HT}(D) := \text{Fil}^i_{HT}(D)/\text{Fil}^{i+1}_{HT}(D),
\]

and its associated *Hodge-Tate slope* by

\[
\mu_{HT}(D) := \frac{1}{\dim_K D} \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} i \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}^i_{HT}(D).
\]

- **de Rham** On \(D := D_{dR}(V)\), there is a natural filtration structure given by

\[
\text{Fil}^i_{HT} D_{dR}(V) := \left( \text{Fil}^i_{HT} \mathbb{B}_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^G.
\]

This is a decreasing filtration by \(K\)-vector subspaces on \(D_{dR}(V)\). Define then the associated graded piece by

\[
\text{Gr}^i_{dR}(D) := \text{Fil}^i_{HT}(D)/\text{Fil}^{i+1}_{HT}(D),
\]

and its associated *Hodge-Tate slope* by

\[
\mu_{dR}(D) := \frac{1}{\dim_K D} \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} i \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}^i_{dR}(D).
\]
and its associated slope by
\[ \mu_{dR}(D) := \frac{1}{\dim_K D} \cdot \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} i \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}^i_{dR}(D). \]

Since
\[ \text{Gr}^i_{dR}B_{dR} \cong C(i) = \text{Gr}^i_{HT}B_{HT}, \]
quite often, we will call the above filtration and its associated slope the \textit{Hodge-Tate filtration} and the \textit{Hodge-Tate slope} respectively;

- **Crystalline** Being naturally embedded in \( B_{dR} \), \( K \otimes_{K_0} B_{\text{crys}} \) admits a natural filtration. Consequently, this induces a natural Hodge-Tate filtration on \( D := K \otimes_{K_0} B_{\text{crys}}(V) \) by \( K \)-vector subspaces.

  Denote by \( D_0 := D_{\text{crys}}(V) \). Since \( B_{\text{crys}} \) admits a natural Frobenius \( \varphi \), we obtain a natural \( \varphi \)-module structure on \( D_0 \) induced from \( \varphi \otimes \text{Id}_V \) on \( B_{\text{crys}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \). Thus working over \( \overline{K_0^{\text{ur}}} \), or better, via the natural residue map, working over \( \overline{k} \), the associated algebraic closure of the residue field \( k \) of \( K \), according to Dieudonne, there is a natural decomposition
\[ D_0 = \bigoplus_{l \in \mathbb{Q}} D_0^l. \]

Here \( D_0^l \) denotes the \( p^l \) eigen-space of \( \varphi \) with \( l = \frac{s}{r} \) the reduced expression of \( l \in \mathbb{Q} \) in terms of quotient of integers \( r, s \), i.e., \( r, s \in \mathbb{Z} \), \( (r, s) = 1 \) and \( r > 0 \). Introduce then the associated \( \mathbb{Q} \)-indexed filtration by \( K_0 \)-vector subspaces, called the \textit{Dieudonne filtration} associated to the \( \varphi \)-module \( D_0 \), by
\[ \text{Fil}^l_{\text{Dieu}} D_0 := \bigoplus_{l \in \mathbb{Q}} D_0^l. \]

Accordingly, define the associated graded \( K_0 \)-vector space by
\[ \text{Gr}^l_{\text{Dieu}}(D) := \text{Fil}^l_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0)/ \bigcup_{j < l} \text{Fil}^j_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0), \]
and the \textit{Dieudonne slope} by
\[ \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0) := \frac{1}{\dim_{K_0} D_0} \cdot \sum_{l \in \mathbb{Q}} l \cdot \dim_{K_0} \text{Gr}^l_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0). \]

- **Semi-Stability** Unlike \( B_{\text{crys}} \), there is no natural embedding of \( K \otimes_{K_0} B_{\text{st}} \) in \( B_{dR} \). But still we can embed \( K \otimes_{K_0} B_{\text{st}} \) in \( B_{dR} \). Fix such an embedding. Then we obtain a filtration by \( K \)-vector subspaces on \( D := K \otimes_{K_0} B_{\text{st}}(V) \). One can easily check that this filtration does not depend on the choice used above, thus it is well-justified to call such a filtration the Hodge-Tate filtration on \( D \).

  Similarly, the Frobenius structure on \( B_{\text{st}} \) induces a natural \( \varphi \)-module structure on the finite dimensional \( K_0 \)-vector space \( D_0 := D_{\text{st}}(V) \), or better, on \( D_0/\overline{K_0^{\text{st}}} \). Accordingly, we can introduce the Dieudonne filtration on \( D_0 \) and hence its associated Dieudonne slope \( \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(V) \).

  Moreover, the natural monodromy operator \( N \) on \( B_{\text{st}} \) introduces a nilpotent monodromy operator \( N \) on \( D_0 \) via \( N \otimes \text{Id}_V \) on \( B_{\text{st}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \). Motivated by this, we say that
$\mathcal{D} = (D_0, D)$ is a filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module if it consists of a finite dimensional $K_0$-vector space $D_0$ and a finite dimensional $K$-vector space $D$, equipped with a exhaustive and separated filtration by $K$-vector subspaces on $D$, a $\varphi$-module structure on $D_0$, and a monodromy operator $N$ satisfying the following compatibility conditions:

(i) $D \cong K \otimes_{K_0} D_0$;
(ii) $N \circ \varphi = p \varphi \circ N$.

Set

$$\mu_{HT}(\mathcal{D}) := \mu_{HT}(D), \quad \mu_{Dieu}(\mathcal{D}) := \mu_{Dieu}(D_0).$$

It is known that $\mu_{Dieu}(D_0)$ is equal to the Newton slope $\mu_N(\mathcal{D})$ of $\mathcal{D}$. Here, $\mu_N(\mathcal{D})$ is defined as follows:

(a) If $D_0$ is of dimension 1 over $K_0$, say, $D_0 = K_0 \cdot d$. Then, we can see that we have $N = 0$ and there exists a non-zero $\lambda \in K_0$ such that $\varphi(d) = \lambda \cdot d$. Consequently, we have $\mu_N(\mathcal{D}) = v_{K_0}(\lambda)$;
(b) In general, we have $\mu_N(\mathcal{D}) = \mu_N(\det \mathcal{D})$,

where $\det \mathcal{D}$ denotes the determinant of $\mathcal{D}$ obtained by taking the maximal exterior products of $D_0$ and $D$.

Tautologically, we have also the notion of saturated filtered $(\varphi, N)$-submodules.

### 35.2 Weak Admissibility and Semi-Stability

Clearly, if $V$ is a $p$-adic semi-stable representation of $G_K$, then $\mathcal{D}(V) := (\mathcal{D}_{st}(V), \mathcal{D}_{dR}(V))$ admits a natural filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module structure, since in this case

$$\mathcal{D}_{dR}(V) = K \otimes_{K_0} \mathcal{D}_{st}(V).$$

Hence it makes sense to talk about the corresponding Hodge-Tate slopes and Newton slopes. Along with this line, an important discovery of Fontaine is the following basic:

**Theorem.** (Fontaine) Let $\rho : G_K \rightarrow \text{GL}(V)$ be a semi-stable $p$-adic representation of $G_K$ and set $\mathcal{D} := (D_0, D)$ with

$$D_0 := \mathcal{D}_{st}(V) \quad \text{and} \quad D := \mathcal{D}_{dR}(V).$$

Then

(i) $\mu_{HT}(\mathcal{D}) = \mu_N(\mathcal{D})$; and
(ii) $\mu_{HT}(\mathcal{D}') \leq \mu_N(\mathcal{D}')$ for any saturated filtered $(\varphi, N)$-submodule $\mathcal{D}' = (D_0', D')$ of $\mathcal{D} = (D_0, D)$.

If a filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module $(D_0, D)$ satisfies the above two conditions (i) and (ii), following Fontaine, we call it a weakly admissible filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module. So the above result then simply says that for a semi-stable representation $V$, its associated periods $\mathcal{D} := (\mathcal{D}_{st}(V), \mathcal{D}_{dR}(V))$ is weakly admissible. More surprisingly, the converse holds correctly. That is to say, we also have the following
Theorem. (Fontaine|Colmez-Fontaine) If $(D_0, D)$ is a weakly admissible filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module. Then there exists a semi-stable representation $V$ of $G_K$ such that

$$D = D_{\text{dR}}(V) \quad \text{and} \quad D_0 = D_{\text{st}}(V).$$

Remark. (A∥B), for contributors, means that the assertion is on one hand conjectured by A and on the other proved by B.

36 Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Galois Representations

We have already explained two of fundamental results on $p$-adic Galois representations, namely, Theorems in §31 and §35. Here we introduce another one, the so-called Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Galois Representations.

To explain this, let us recall that a $p$-adic Galois representation $\rho : G_K \to \text{GL}(V)$ is called potentially semi-stable, if there exists a finite Galois extension $L/K$ such that the induced Galois representation $\rho|_{G_L} : G_L(\hookrightarrow G_K) \to \text{GL}(V)$ is a semi-stable representation. One can easily check that every potentially semi-stable representation is de Rham. As a $p$-adic analogue of the Monodromy Theorem for $l$-adic Galois Representations, we have the following fundamental thing:

Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Galois Reps. (Fontaine∥Berger) All de Rham representations are potentially semi-stable representations.

Started with Sen’s theory for $\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$ of Fontaine, bridged by over-convergence of $p$-adic representations due to (Cherbonnier|Cherbonnier-Colmez), Berger’s proof is based on the so-called $p$-adic monodromy theorem (for $p$-adic differential equations) of (Crew, Tsuzuki∥Crew, Tsuzuki, Andre, Kedelaya, Menkhout). For more details, please refer to the final chapter.

37 Semi-Stability of Filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-Modules

37.1 Weak Admissibility = Stability and of Slope Zero

With the geometric picture in mind, particularly the works of Weil, Grothendieck, Mumford, Narasimhan-Seshadri and Seshadri, we then notice that weakly admissible condition for filtered $(\varphi, N)$-module $\mathbb{D} = (D_0, D)$ is an arithmetic analogue of the condition on semi-stable bundles of slope zero. Indeed, if we set $\mu_{\text{total}}(\mathbb{D}) := \mu_{\text{HT}}(D) - \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0)$, then the first condition of weak admissibility, namely,

(i) $\mu_{\text{HT}}(D) = \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0)$

is equivalent to the slope zero condition

(i') $\mu_{\text{total}}(\mathbb{D}) = 0$;

and the second condition

(ii) $\mu_{\text{HT}}(D') \leq \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(D'_0)$ for any saturated filtered $(\varphi, N)$-submodule $(D'_0, D')$ of $(D_0, D)$, is equivalent to the semi-stability condition

(ii') $\mu_{\text{total}}(D') \leq \mu_{\text{total}}(\mathbb{D}) = 0$ for all saturated filtered $(\varphi, N)$-submodule $D'$ of $\mathbb{D}$. 

85
Put in this way, the above correspondence between semi-stable Galois representations and weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-modules may be understood as an arithmetic analogue of the Narasimhan-Seshadri correspondence between irreducible unitary representations and stable bundles of degree zero over compact Riemann surfaces.

Accordingly, in order to establish a general class field theory for \(p\)-adic number fields, we need to introduce some new structures to tackle ramifications. Recall that in algebraic geometry, as explained in Part A, there are two parallel theories for this purpose, namely, the \(\pi\)-bundle one on the covering space using Galois groups; and the parabolic bundle one on the base space using parabolic structures. Hence, in our current arithmetic setting, we would like to develop corresponding theories.

The \(\pi\)-bundle analogue is easy, based on Monodromy theorem for \(p\)-adic Galois Representations. In fact, we have the following orbifold version:

**Theorem.** (Fontaine\cite{Fontaine}, Fontaine, Colmez-Fontaine, Berger) There exists a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence

\[
\{\text{de Rham Galois representations of } G_K\}
\]

\[
\cong
\{\text{semi-stable filtered } (\varphi, N; G_{L/K}) \text{ of slope zero: } \exists L/K \text{ finite Galois}\}.
\]

### 37.2 Ramifications

In geometry, parabolic structures take care of ramifications. Recall that if \(M^0 \hookrightarrow M\) is a punctured Riemann surface, then around the punctures \(P_i \in M\setminus M^0, i = 1, 2, \ldots, N\), the associated monodromy groups generated by parabolic elements \(S_i\) are isomorphic to \(\mathbb{Z}\), an abelian group. Thus for a unitary representation \(\rho : \pi_1(M^0, *) \to \text{GL}(V)\), the images of \(\rho(S_i)\) are given by diagonal matrices with diagonal entries \(\exp(2\pi \sqrt{-1} \alpha_{i,k})\), that is to say, they are determined by unitary characters \(\exp(2\pi \sqrt{-1} \alpha, \alpha \in \mathbb{Q})\). As such, to see the corresponding ramifications, one usually choose a certain cyclic covering with ramifications around \(P_i\)’s such that the orbifold semi-stable bundles can be characterized by semi-stable parabolic bundles on \((M^0, M)\).

However, in arithmetic side, the picture is much more complicated since there is no simple way to make each step abelian. By contrast, the good news is that there is a well-established theory in number theory to measure ramifications, namely, the theory of high ramification groups.

Let then \(G_k^{(r)}\) be the upper-indexed high ramification groups of \(G_K\), parametrized by non-negative reals \(r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}\). (See e.g., \cite{Se3}.) Denote then by \(V^{(r)} := V_k^{G_k}\) the invariant subspace of \(V\) under \(G_k^{(r)}\), and \(K^{(r)} := K_k^{G_k^{(r)}}\). For a \(p\)-adic Galois representation \(V\), define the associated \(r\)-th graded piece by

\[
\text{Gr}^{(r)} V := \bigcap_{s \geq r} V^{(s)} / \bigcup_{s < r} V^{(s)},
\]

and its Swan conductor by

\[
\text{Sw}(\rho) := \sum_{r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}} r \cdot \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \text{Gr}^{(r)} V.
\]
Proposition. Let $\rho : G_K \to \text{GL}(V)$ be a de Rham representation.

(i) (Hasse-Arf Lemma) All jumps of $\text{Gr}^{(r)}V$ are rational;
(ii) (Artin, Fontaine) There exists a Swan representation $\rho_{Sw} : G_K \to \text{GL}(V_{Sw})$ such that

$$\langle \rho_{Sw}, \rho \rangle = \text{Sw}(\rho).$$

In particular, $\text{Sw}(\rho) \in \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0}$.

37.3 $\omega$-structures

Recall that in geometry ([MY]), parabolic structures, taking care of ramifications, can also be characterized via an $\mathbb{R}$-index filtration

$$E_i := \left(p_* \left(W \otimes O_Y (\# \Gamma \cdot t)D\right)\right)^F,$$

and its associated parabolic degree is measured by

$$\sum_i \alpha_i \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}^i V.$$

Moreover, it is known that the filtration $E_i$ is
(i) left continuous;
(ii) has jumps only at $t = \alpha_i - \alpha_{i-1} \in \mathbb{Q}$; and
(iii) with parabolic degree in $\mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0}$.

Even we have not yet checked with geometers whether their ramification filtration constructions are motivated by the arithmetic one related to the filtration of upper indexed high ramification groups, the similarities between both constructions are quite apparent. Indeed, it is well-known that, for the filtrations on Galois groups $G_K$ and on representations $V$ induced from that of high ramification groups $G^{(r)}_K$,

(i) by definition, $G^{(r)}_K$ and hence $V^{(r)}$ are left continuous;
(ii) from the Hasse-Arf Lemma, all jumps of $G^{(r)}_K$ and hence of $V^{(r)}$ are rational; and
(iii) according to essentially a result of Artin, the Artin/Swan conductors are non-negative integers.

Motivated by this, for a finite dimensional $K$-vector space $D$, a $\omega$-filtration $\text{Fil}_\omega D$ is defined to be a $\mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}$-indexed increasing and exhaustive filtration by finite dimensional $K$-vector subspaces on $D$ satisfying the following properties:
(i) (Continuity) it is left continuous;
(ii) (Hasse-Arf’s Rationality) it has all jumps at rationals;

Define then the associated $r$-th graded piece by

$$\text{Gr}_\omega^{(r)}D := \bigcap_{s \geq r} \text{Fil}_\omega^{(s)}D / \bigcup_{s < r} \text{Fil}_\omega^{(s)}D,$$

and its $\omega$-slope by

$$\mu_\omega(D) := \frac{1}{\dim_K D} \cdot \sum_{r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}} r \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}_\omega^{(r)}D.$$
The ω-degree
\[ \deg_\omega(D) := \sum_{r \in \mathbb{R} \geq 0} r \cdot \dim_K \text{Gr}^r(D) = \dim_K D \cdot \mu_\omega(D) \]
is a non-negative integer.

### 37.4 Semi-Stability of Filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-Modules

By the monodromy theorem of \(p\)-adic Galois representations, for a de Rham representation \(V\) of \(G_K\), there exists a finite Galois extension \(L/K\) such that \(V\), as a representation of \(G_L\), is semi-stable. As such, then, over the extension field \(L\), the weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-structure on \(\left\langle D_{dR}(V), D_{dR}(V) \right\rangle\) is equipped with a compatible Galois action of \(G_{L/K}\). By contrast, motivated by the non-abelian class field theory for Riemann surfaces, we expect that the \(\omega\)-structures would play a similar role in our approach to a general CFT in arithmetic as that of parabolic structures in geometry.

Accordingly, we make the following

**Definition.**

(i) A filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module \(D := (D_0, D; \text{Fil}_\omega D)\) is a filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module \((D_0, D)\) equipped with a compatible \(\omega\)-structure on \(D\);

(ii) Tautologically, we have the notion of a saturated filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-submodule \(D' := (D_0', D'; \text{Fil}_\omega D')\) of \(D = (D_0, D; \text{Fil}_\omega D)\);

(iii) Define the total slope of a filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module \(D := (D_0, D; \text{Fil}_\omega D)\) by
\[
\mu_{\text{total}}(D) := \mu_{\text{HT}}(D) - \mu_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0) - \mu_\omega(D);
\]

(iv) A filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module \(D = (D_0, D; \text{Fil}_\omega D)\) is called semi-stable and of slope zero if

(a) \((\text{Slope 0})\) it is of total slope zero, i.e.,
\[
\mu_{\text{total}}(D) = 0;
\]

(b) \((\text{Semi-Stability})\) For every saturated filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module \(D'\) of \(D\), we have
\[
\mu_{\text{total}}(D') \leq \mu_{\text{total}}(D).
\]

### 38 General CFT for \(p\)-adic Number Fields

#### 38.1 Micro Reciprocity Law

With all these preparations, we are now ready to make the following:

**Conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law.** There exists a canonical one-to-one correspondence

\[
\left\{\text{de Rham representations of } G_K \right\} \leftrightarrow \left\{\text{semi-stable filtered } (\varphi, N; \omega)\text{-modules of slope zero over } K \right\}.
\]

88
38.2 General CFT for \( p \)-adic Number Fields

Denote the category of semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules of slope zero over \( K \) by \( \text{FM}^{ss}_K(\varphi, N; \omega) \). Assuming the MRL, i.e., the micro reciprocity law, then we can easily show that, with respect to natural structures, \( \text{FM}^{ss}_K(\varphi, N; \omega) \) becomes a Tannakian category. Denote by \( \mathbb{F} \) the natural fiber functor to the category of finite \( K \)-vector spaces. Then, from the standard Tannakian category theory, we obtain the following

**General CFT for \( p \)-adic Number Fields**

- **Existence Theorem** There exists a canonical one-to-one correspondence

\[
\{ \text{Finitely Generated Sub-Tannakian Categories} \left( \Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|L} \right) \} \leftrightarrow \Pi \{ \text{Finite Galois Extensions} \ L/K \};
\]

Moreover,

- **Reciprocity Law** The canonical correspondence above induces a natural isomorphism

\[
\text{Aut}^0(\Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|L}) \cong \text{Gal}(\Pi(\Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|L})).
\]

In fact much refined result holds: By using \( \omega \)-filtration, for all \( r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0} \), we may form a sub-Tannakian category \( (\Sigma^{(r)}, \mathbb{F}_{|\Sigma^{(r)}}) \) of \( (\Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|\Sigma}) \), consisting of objects admitting trivial \( \text{Fil}^r_{\omega} \) for all \( r' \geq r \).

- **Refined Reciprocity Law** The natural correspondence \( \Pi \) induces, for all \( r \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0} \), a canonical isomorphism

\[
\text{Aut}^0(\Sigma^{(r)}, \mathbb{F}_{|\Sigma^{(r)}}) \cong \text{Gal}(\Pi(\Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|\Sigma}))/\text{Gal}^r(\Pi(\Sigma, \mathbb{F}_{|\Sigma})).
\]
Chapter XIV. GIT Stability, Moduli and Invariants

39 Moduli Spaces

Let $D := (D_0, D; \text{Fil}^\omega(D))$ be a filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-module of rank $d$ over $K$. Then $D_0$ is a $d$-dimensional $K_0$-vector space equipped with a $(\varphi, N)$-module structure, which induces a $K_0$-vector subspace filtration of $D_0$, namely, the $\mathbb{Q}$-indexed Dieudonné filtration $[\text{Fil}^i_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0)]_{i \in \mathbb{Q}}$, $D = K \otimes_{K_0} D_0$, and there are two $K$-vector subspace filtrations of $D$, namely, the decreasing Hodge-Tate filtration $[\text{Fil}^i_{\text{HT}}(D)]_{i \in \mathbb{R}}$, and the increasing $\omega$-filtration $[\text{Fil}^i_{\omega}(D)]_{i \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}}$ which is compatible with $\varphi$ and $N$.

Let $P(\kappa_{\text{Dieu}})$ and $P(\kappa_{\text{HT}})$ be the corresponding parabolic subgroups of $\text{GL}(D_0)$ and of $\text{GL}(D)$. Define the character $L_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}$ of $P(\kappa_{\text{HT}})$ by

$$L_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}(\gamma) := \bigotimes_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} (\det \text{Gr}^i_{\text{HT}}(D))^{\otimes -i}.$$ 

Similarly, define the (rational) character $L_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}}$ of $P(\kappa_{\text{Dieu}})$ by

$$L_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}}(\gamma) := \bigotimes_{i \in \mathbb{Q}} (\det \text{Gr}^i_{\text{Dieu}}(D_0))^{\otimes -i}.$$ 

(Unlike $L_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}$, which is an element of the group $X^*(P_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}})$ of characters of $P_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}$, being rationally indexed, $L_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}}$ is in general not an element of $X^*(P_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}})$, but a rational character, i.e., it belongs to $X^*(P_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}}) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$.)

Moreover, since all jumps of an $\omega$-structure are rationals, it makes sense to define the associated parabolic subgroup $P(\kappa_{\omega})$ and a (rational) character $L_{\kappa_{\omega}}$ of $P(\kappa_{\omega})$ by

$$L_{\kappa_{\omega}}(\gamma) := \bigotimes_{i \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}} (\det \text{Gr}^i_{\omega}(D))^{\otimes -i}.$$ 

As usual, identify $L_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}$ with an element of $\text{Pic}^{\text{GL}(D)}(\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\text{HT}}))$, where $\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\text{HT}})$ denotes the partial flag variety consisting of all filtrations of $D$ with the same graded piece dimensions $\text{dim}_K \text{Gr}^d_i(D)$. (We have identified $\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\text{HT}})$ with $\text{GL}(D)/P_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}}$.) Similarly, we get an element $L_{\kappa_{\omega}}$ of $\text{Pic}^{\text{GL}(D)}(\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\omega})) \otimes \mathbb{Q}$, with $\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\omega})$ the partial flag variety consisting of all filtrations of $D$ with the same $\text{dim}_K \text{Gr}^d_i(D)$. Thus, it makes sense to talk about the rational line bundle $(L_{\kappa_{\text{HT}}} \otimes L_{\kappa_{\omega}}) \otimes L_{\kappa_{\text{Dieu}}}$ on the product variety $\text{Flag}(\kappa_{\text{HT}}) \times \text{Flag}(\kappa_{\omega})$. Moreover, define $J = J_K$ be an algebraic group whose $\mathbb{Q}_p$-rational points consist of automorphisms of the filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-module $D$ over $K$. We infer the following Proposition essentially from the works of Langton, Mehta-Seshadri, Rapoport-Zink, and particularly, Totaro.

**Proposition.** ([Lan], [MS], [To]) Assume $k$ is algebraically closed. Then $(D_0, D; \text{Fil}^\omega(D))$ is semi-stable of slope zero if and only if the corresponding point

$$(\text{Fil}^i_{\text{HT}}(D), \text{Fil}^i_{\omega}(D)) \in \text{Flag}(\kappa_{\text{HT}}) \times \text{Flag}(\kappa_{\omega})$$

is semi-stable of slope zero.
is semi-stable with respect to all one-parameter subgroups $\mathbb{G}_m \to J$ defined over $\mathbb{Q}_p$ and the rational $J$-line bundle

$$\left( L_{\kappa_{HT}} \otimes L_{\kappa_{o}} \right) \otimes L_{\kappa_{Dieu}}$$

on $\text{Flag}(\kappa_{HT}) \times \text{Flag}(\kappa_{o})$.

As a direct consequence, following Mumford’s Geometric Invariant Theory ([M]), we then obtain the moduli space $\mathfrak{M}_{\kappa_{HT}}^{N, \omega}$ of rank $d$ semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules of slope zero over $K$. In particular, when there is no $\omega$-structure involved, we denote the corresponding moduli space simply by $\mathfrak{M}_{K,d,0}^{N, \omega}$.

**Remark.** The notion of semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules of slope $s$ and the associated moduli space $\mathfrak{M}_{K,s}^{N, \omega}$ for arbitrary $s$ can also be introduced similarly. We leave the details to the reader.

### 40 Polarizations and Galois Cohomology

With moduli spaces of semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules built, next we want to introduce various invariants (using these spaces). Recall that in (algebraic) geometry for semi-stable vector bundles, this process is divided into two: First we construct natural polarizations via the so-called Mumford-Grothendieck determinant line bundles of cohomologies; then we study the cohomologies of these polarizations.

Moduli spaces of semi-stable filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules, being projective, admit natural geometrized polarizations as well. However, such geometric polarizations, in general, are quite hard to be used arithmetically, due to the fact that it is difficult to reinterpret them in terms of arithmetic structures involved. To overcome this difficulty, we here want to use Galois cohomologies of $p$-adic representations, motivated by the $(\varphi, K)$-modules interpretations of cohomology of (certain types of) vector bundles over homogeneous spaces.

On the other hand, as said, such polarizations, or better, determinant line bundles, if exist, should be understood as arithmetic analogues of Grothendieck-Mumford determinant line bundles constructed using cohomologies of vector bundles. Accordingly, if we were seeking a perfect theory, we should first develop an analogue of sheaf cohomology for filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules. We will discuss this elsewhere, but merely point out here the follows:

(i) a good cohomology theory in the simplest abelian case of $r = 1$ is already very interesting since it would naturally lead to a true arithmetic analogue of the theory of Picard varieties, an understanding of which is expected to play a key role in our intersectional approach to the Riemann Hypothesis proposed in our Program paper [W2];

(ii) the yet to be developed cohomology theory would help us to build up $p$-adic $L$-functions algebraically. This algebraically defined $L$-function for filtered $(\varphi, N; \omega)$-modules then should be compared to $p$-adic $L$-functions for Galois representations defined using Galois cohomology ([PR]). We expect that these two different types of $L$’s correspond to each other in a canonical way and further can be globalized within the
framework of the thin theory of adelic Galois representations proposed in the introduction.

41 Iwasawa Cohomology and Dual Exp Map

In this section, we recall some basic facts about Iwasawa cohomology needed in defining \( p \)-adic \( L \)-functions following [Col1, Col3].

41.1 Galois Cohomology

Let \( M \) be a \( \mathbb{Z}_p \)-representation of \( G_K \). As usual, for any \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), denote by \( C^n_c(G_K, M) \) the collections of continuous maps \( G_K^n \to M \), called \( n \)-cochains of \( G_K \) with coefficients in \( M \). (Thus \( C^n_c(G_K, M) \) is simply \( M \).) Define the boundary map \( d_n : C^n(G_K, M) \to C^{n+1}(G_K, M) \) by

\[
(d_0a)(g) := g(a) - a;
(d_1f)(g_1g_2) := g_1(f(g_2)) - f(g_1g_2) + f(g_1);
\]

\[
(d_n f)(g_1, g_2, \ldots, g_n) := g_1 f(g_2, g_3, \ldots, g_n) + \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{(-1)^{i+1}}{2} (f(g_1, g_2, \ldots, g_{i-1}, g_i, g_{i+1}, g_{i+2}, \ldots, g_n) - f(g_1, g_2, \ldots, g_{n-1}, g_n))
\]

One can easily check that \( \{C^n_c(G_K, M), d_n\} \) forms a complex of abelian groups. Set \( Z^n_c(G_K, M) := \ker d_n \) be the collections of \( n \)-th cocycles, and \( B^n(G_K, M) := \text{im} d_{n-1} \) the collections of \( n \)-th coboundaries. Then, the \( n \)-th Galois cohomology of \( M \) is defined by

\[
H^n_c(G_K, M) := H^n_c(C^n_c(G_K, M), d_n) := Z^n_c(G_K, M)/B^n_c(G_K, M).
\]

For examples, \( H^0(G_K, M) = M^{G_K} \),

\[
Z^1_c(G_K, M) = \left\{ f : G_K \to M : f \text{ continuous}, \ f(g_1g_2) = g_1f(g_2) + f(g_1) \right\}
\]

and \( B^1_c(G_K, M) := \left\{ f_m : g \mapsto gm - m : \exists m \in M \right\} \).

As usual, for a \( p \)-adic representation \( V \) of \( G_K \), choose a maximal \( G_K \)-stable \( \mathbb{Z}_p \)-lattice \( M \), and set

\[
H^n(V, V) := H^n_c(G_K, M) \otimes \mathbb{Q}_p.
\]

Proposition. (See e.g., [Hi]) Let \( V \) be a \( p \)-adic representation of \( G_K \). Then
(i) \( H^{n \geq 3}(G_K, V) = 0 \);
(ii) \( H^2(G_K, V) = H^0(G_K, V^\vee(1))^\vee \) and \( H^1(G_K, V) = H^1(G_K, V^\vee(1))^\vee \);
(iii) \( \sum_{n=0}^2 (-1)^n \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p} H^n_c(G_K, V) = -[K : \mathbb{Q}_p] \cdot \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V. \)
41.2 \((\varphi, \Gamma)\)-Modules and Galois Cohomology

We already knew that the category of etale \((\varphi, \Gamma)\)-modules is equivalent to that of \(p\)-adic Galois representations. Thus, in principle, it is possible to compute Galois cohomologies in terms of \((\varphi, \Gamma)\)-modules.

Let \(K\) be a \(p\)-adic number field. As usual, denote by \(K_n := K(\mu_p^n)\), \(n \geq 1\) and \(K_\infty = \bigcup_{n \geq 1} K_n\) with \(\mu_p^n\) the \(p^n\)-th roots of unity. Set \(\Gamma_n := \text{Gal}(K_\infty/K_n)\). For simplicity, in the sequel, assume that \(\Gamma_n\) is free and hence of rank 1 over \(\mathbb{Z}_p\).

Let \(V\) be a \(p\)-adic representation of \(G_K\). For a fixed generator \(\gamma \in \Gamma_K\), introduce the complex \(C_{\varphi, \gamma}(K, V)\) via:

\[
0 \to \mathbb{D}(V)^{(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)} \to \mathbb{D}(V) \oplus \mathbb{D}(V)^{(\gamma - 1)p, (\gamma - 1)p} \to \mathbb{D}(V) \to 0.
\]

**Lemma.** (Herr) Let \(V\) be a \(p\)-adic representation of \(G_K\). Then the cohomology of the complex \(C_{\varphi, \gamma}(K, V)\) is naturally isomorphic to the Galois cohomology of \(V\).

41.3 Iwasawa Cohomology \(H^i_{\text{Iw}}(K, V)\)

Choose a system of generators \(\gamma_n\) of \(\Gamma_n\) such that \(\gamma_n = \gamma_1^{p^{n-1}}\). Then, \(\mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]]\), the so-called the Iwasawa algebra, may be realized as the topological ring \(\mathbb{Z}_p[[T]]\) with the \((p, T)\)-adic topology \(T \leftrightarrow \gamma - 1\), and

\[
\mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]]/(\gamma_n - 1) \cong \mathbb{Z}_p[\text{Gal}(K_n/K)].
\]

Moreover, via the quotient map \(G_K \to \Gamma_K\), we obtain a natural \(G_K\) action on \(\mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]]\) and hence a \(G_K\)-action on \(\mathbb{Z}_p[\text{Gal}(K_n/K)]\).

Recall that for a \(\mathbb{Z}_p[G_K]\)-module \(M\), using Shapiro’s lemma, see e.g., [Hi], we have canonical isomorphisms

\[
H^i(G_{K_n}, M) \cong H^i(G_K, \mathbb{Z}_p[\text{Gal}(K_n/K)] \otimes M),
\]

which then make the corestriction maps \(H^i(G_{K_{n+1}}, M) \to H^i(G_{K_n}, M)\) a projective system. Consequently, associated to a \(\mathbb{Z}_p\)-representation \(M\) of \(G_K\), we obtain the well-defined **Iwasawa cohomology groups**

\[
H^i_{\text{Iw}}(K, M) := \lim_\leftarrow H^i(G_{K_n}, M).
\]

Moreover, for a \(p\)-adic representation \(V\) of \(G_K\), define its associated Iwasawa cohomology by

\[
H^i_{\text{Iw}}(K, V) := H^i_{\text{Iw}}(K, \Lambda) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_p} \mathbb{Q}_p,
\]

where \(\Lambda\) is a (maximal) \(G_K\)-stable \(\mathbb{Z}_p\)-lattice of \(V\).

41.4 Two Descriptions of \(H^i_{\text{Iw}}(K, V)\)

There are various ways to describe Iwasawa cohomologies. For example, we have the following:
Proposition. $H^i_{Iw}(K, V) = H^i(G_K, \mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]] \otimes V)$.

Consequently, Iwasawa cohomologies admit natural $\mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]]$-module structures. Quite often we also call $H^i_{Iw}(K, V)$ Iwasawa modules associated to $V$. Moreover, recall that there is a natural bijection

$$\mathbb{Z}_p[[\Gamma_K]] \otimes V \cong D_0(\Gamma_K, V) \otimes \mathcal{D}_\gamma \otimes v,$$

where $D_0(\Gamma_K, V)$ denotes the set of $p$-adic measures from $\Gamma_K$ to $V$, and $\delta_\gamma$ denotes the Dirac measure at $\gamma$. Therefore, we can interpret elements of $H^1_{Iw}(K, V)$ in terms of $p$-adic measures. In particular, if $\eta : \Gamma_K \to \mathbb{Q}_p^\times$ is a continuous character, then, for any $n \geq 1$, we obtain a natural map

$$H^1_{Iw}(K, V) \xrightarrow{\mu} H^1(G_K, V \otimes \eta) \xrightarrow{\int_{\mathfrak{m}_n}} \mathcal{D}_\gamma \otimes \eta \mu.$$

We can also interpret Iwasawa modules in terms of $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-modules. Denote by $\psi$ a left inverse of the Frobenius $\varphi$. If $V$ is a $\mathbb{Z}_p$-representation of $G_K$, then there exists a unique operator $\psi : \mathbb{D}(V) \to \mathbb{D}(V)$ such that $\psi(\varphi(a)x) = a\psi(x)$ and $\psi(a\varphi(x)) = \varphi(a)x$ for $a \in A_K, x \in \mathbb{D}(V)$ and $\psi$ commutes with the action of $\Gamma_K$. Similarly, if $D$ is an etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module over $A_K$ or $B_K$, there exists a unique operator $\psi : D \to D$ as above. In particular, for any $x \in D$, $x$ can be written as $x = \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} [e] \varphi^i(x_i)$ where $x_i := \psi^i([e]^{-1}x)$.

Lemma. (See e.g., [Col3]) (1) If $D$ is an etale $\varphi$-module over $A_K$ (resp. over $B_K$), then

(i) $D^{\varphi=1}$ is compact (resp. locally compact);

(ii) $D/(\varphi - 1)$ is finitely generated over $\mathbb{Z}_p$ (resp. over $\mathbb{Q}_p$).

(2) Let $V$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$. Let $C_{\varphi, \gamma}$ be the complex

$$0 \to \mathbb{D}(V) \xrightarrow{(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)} \mathbb{D}(V) \oplus \mathbb{D}(V) \xrightarrow{(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)} \mathbb{D}(V) \to 0.$$

Then we have a commutative diagram of between complexes $C_{\varphi, \gamma}$ and $C_{\varphi, \gamma}$:

$$\begin{array}{c}
0 \to \mathbb{D}(V) \xrightarrow{(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)} \mathbb{D}(V) \oplus \mathbb{D}(V) \xrightarrow{(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)} \mathbb{D}(V) \to 0 \\
\text{Id} \downarrow \xrightarrow{\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1} \xrightarrow{-\varphi + 1} \xrightarrow{\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1} \xrightarrow{-\varphi + 1} \mathbb{D}(V) \to 0,
\end{array}$$

which induces an isomorphism on cohomologies.

Corollary. (See e.g., [Col3]) If $V$ is a $\mathbb{Z}_p/\mathbb{Q}_p$-representation of $G_K$, then $C_{\varphi, \gamma}(K, V)$ computes the Galois cohomology of $V$. More precisely,

(i) $H^0(G_K, V) = \mathbb{D}(V)^{\varphi=1, \gamma=1}$;

(ii) $H^2(G_K, V) = \mathbb{D}(V)/(\varphi - 1, \gamma - 1)$; and

(iii) there exists a short exact sequence

$$0 \to \mathbb{D}(V)/(\gamma - 1) \to H^1(G_K, V) \to \left(\mathbb{D}(V)/(\varphi - 1)\right)^{\gamma=1} \to 0.$$

Consequently, $H^i_{Iw}(K, V) = 0$ if $i \neq 1, 2$, and there are canonical isomorphisms

$$\text{Exp}^* : H^1_{Iw}(K, V) = \mathbb{D}(V)^{\varphi=1}, \quad \text{and} \quad H^2_{Iw}(K, V) = \mathbb{D}(V)/(\varphi - 1).$$

94
41.5 Dual Exponential Maps

From now on, assume that $V$ is de Rham. Then we have the following natural isomorphisms

$$B_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \cong B_{dR} \otimes K_{dR}(V), \quad D_{dR}(V) = H^0(G_K, B_{dR} \otimes \mathbb{Q}_p V)$$

and

$$H^1(G_K, B_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V) = H^1(G_K, B_{dR}) \otimes K_{dR}(V).$$

Recall also that

(i) for all $k \neq 0$, $H^i(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p(k)) = 0$ for all $i$;
(ii) for all $i \geq 2$, $H^i(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p) = 0$, $H^0(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p) = K$; and
(iii) $H^1(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p)$ is a one-dimensional $K$-vector space generated by $\log \chi \in H^1(G_K, \mathbb{Q}_p)$.

Consequently, the cup product $x \mapsto x \cup \log \chi$ gives isomorphisms

$$H^0(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p) \cong H^1(G_K, \mathbb{C}_p)$$

and

$$D_{dR}(V) \cong H^1(G_K, B_{dR} \otimes V).$$

All this then leads to the so-called Bloch-Kato dual exponential map ([BK2]) for a de Rham representation $V$ of $G_K$, i.e., the composition

$$\exp^* : H^1(G_K, V) \to H^1(G_K, B_{dR} \otimes V) \cong D_{dR}(V).$$

Consequently, for any $\mu \in H^1_{Iw}(K, V)$, for any $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, we obtain a natural element

$$\exp^* \left( \int_{\Gamma_K} \chi^k \mu \right) \in t^{-k} K_n \otimes K_{dR}(V),$$

which is zero when $k \gg 0$.

Moreover, from the overconvergent theory ([CC]), there exists $n(V)$ such that, for all $n \geq n(V)$, the natural map $\varphi^n$ sends $D(V)^{\varphi=1}$ into

$$\varphi^{-n} \left( D(V)^{\varphi=1} \right) \subset K_n(i) \otimes K_{dR}(V).$$

Exp versus exp. Let $V$ be a de Rham representation of $G_K$, and $\mu \in H^1_{Iw}(K, V)$. Then, for all $n \geq n(V)$,

$$p^{-n} \cdot \varphi^{-n}(\exp^*(\mu)) = \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} \exp^* \left( \int_{\Gamma_K} \chi^k \mu \right).$$

That is to say, when $V$ is de Rham, the isomorphism

$$\exp^* : H^1_{Iw}(K, V) \cong D(V)^{\varphi=1}$$

and the Bloch-Kato dual exponential map admit much more refined arithmetic structures. This is particularly so when the representation is semi-stable. In fact, following Perrin-Riou ([PR]), it is known that they are related to theory of $p$-adic $L$-functions. We leave the details to the literatures. Instead, to end this discussion of polarizations, let us simply point out that the associated determinants, or better, exterior products, are very important invariants and hence should be investigated from a more board point of view.
Chapter XV. Two Approaches to Conjectural MRL

42 Algebraic and Geometric Methods

There are two different approaches to establish the conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law. Namely, algebraic one and geometric one.

Let us start with algebraic approach. Here, we want to establish a correspondence between filtered \((\varphi, N; G)\)-modules \(M\) and filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules \(D\). Obviously, this is an arithmetic analogue of Seshadri’s correspondence between \(\pi\)-bundles and parabolic bundles over Riemann surfaces. Therefore, we expect further that our correspondence satisfies the following two compatibility conditions:

(i) it induces a natural correspondence between saturated subobjects \(M'\) and \(D'\) of \(M\) and \(D\); and

(ii) it scales the slopes by a constant multiple of \(\#G\). Namely,

\[
\mu_{\text{total}}(M') = \#G \cdot \mu_{\text{total}}(D').
\]

Assume the existence of such a correspondence. Then, as a direct consequence of the compatibility conditions, semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; G)\)-modules \(M\) of slope zero correspond naturally to semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules \(D\) of slope zero. Indeed, if \(M\) is a semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; G)\)-module of slope zero, then using the correspondence, we obtain a filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module \(D\). Clearly, by (ii), we conclude that the slope of \(D\) is zero. Furthermore, \(D\) is semi-stable as well: Let \(D'\) be a saturated submodule of \(D\). Then, via the induced correspondence (i) for saturated submodules, there exists a saturated submodule \(M'\) of \(M\) such that the slope of \(M'\) is a positive multiple of the slope of \(D'\). On the other hand, since \(M\) is semi-stable, the slope of \(M'\) is at most zero. Consequently, the slope of \(D'\) is at most zero too. So \(D\) is semi-stable of slope zero. We are done. Conversely, if \(D\) is a semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-module of slope zero, then the corresponding filtered \((\varphi, N; G)\)-module \(M\) can be similarly proved to be semi-stable of slope zero.

In this way, via the MRL with limited ramifications and the Monodromy Theorem for \(p\)-adic Galois Representations, we are able to establish the conjectural MRL.

With algebraic approach roughly discussed, let us say also a few wrods on the geometric approach here. Simply put, the main point we want to establish there is a direct correspondence between \(p\)-adic representations with finite monodromy around marks of fundamental groups of curves defined over finite fields of characteristic \(p\) and what we call semi-stable rigid parabolic \(\mathbb{F}\)-bundles in what should be called logarithmic rigid analytic geometry.

43 MRL with Limited Ramifications

Before we give more details on our algebraic approach, for completion, let us in this section recall some of the key ingredients in establishing the natural connec-
tion between semi-stable Galois representations and weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-modules.

### 43.1 Logarithmic Map

We start with a description of refined structures of \(B_{\text{crys}}\).

Set \(O^*_C := \{x \in O_C : \|x - 1\| < 1\}\) be a subgroup of units of \(O_C\). Clearly,

(i) if \(x \in O^*_C\), then \(x^{p^r} \to 1\) as \(r \to +\infty\); and

(ii) for all \(r \in \mathbb{Z}_{\geq 0}\), the map \(x \mapsto x^{p^r}\) induces a surjective morphism from \(O^*_C\) into itself with kernel \(\mu_{p^r}(\mathbb{C})\). Consequently, any element in \(O^*_C\) has exactly \(p^r\) numbers of \(p^r\)-th roots in \(O^*_C\).

Let \(U^* := \{(x^{(n)}) \in \widehat{\mathbb{E}}^+ : x^{(0)} \in O^*_C\}\).

From above, one can easily check that

(iii) the multiplicative group \(U^*_1\), resp. \(U^*_1\), admits a natural \(\mathbb{Z}_p\)-module structure, resp. \(\mathbb{Q}_p\)-vector space structure, such that

\[ U^*_1 \cong \mathbb{Q}_p \otimes \mathbb{Z}_p U^*_1; \]

(iv) if \(x \in U^*_1\), then \([x] - 1 \in \text{Ker} \theta + p \cdot W(\widehat{\mathbb{E}}^+).

Consequently, the series

\[ \log[x] := -\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^n \frac{[x] - 1)^n}{n} \]

converges in \(A_{\text{crys}}\). Hence, we get a logarithmic map \(\log[\ ] : U^*_1 \to A_{\text{crys}}\) which can also be extended to a logarithmic map \(\log[\ ] : U^*_1 \to \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1\). Denote its image by \(U\).

Clearly, \(\varphi([x]) = (x^p)\) and \(\varphi(\log[x]) = p \cdot \log[x]\) for all \(x \in U^*_1\).

### 43.2 Basic Structures of \(\mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1\)

As usual, let

\[ \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1 := \{x \in \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}} ; \varphi(x) = x\}. \]

Also fix an element \(v \in U(-1) - \mathbb{Q}_p\). Then, we have the following

**Theorem.** ([CF])

(i.a) \(\text{Fil}^0 \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1 = \mathbb{Q}_p\);

(i.b) \(\text{Fil}^i \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1 = 0\) for all \(i > 0\);

(i.c) \(\text{Fil}^{-1} \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1 = U(-1)\);

(i.d) All elements \(b \in \text{Fil}^{-i} \mathbb{B}_{\text{crys}}^1, i \geq 1, can be written in the form

\[ b = b_0 + b_1 v + \cdots + b_{r-1} v^{r-1} \]

where \(b_0, b_1, \ldots, b_{r-1} \in U(-1)\);
(ii.a) For all \( r \geq 1 \), there is an exact sequence
\[
0 \to \mathbb{Q}_p \to \Fil^{-r} \mathbb{B}_{crys}^{e=1} \to \left( \Fil^{-r} \mathbb{B}_{dR} / \mathbb{B}_{dR}^+ \right) \to 0;
\]

(ii.b) There is an exact sequence
\[
0 \to \mathbb{Q}_p \to \mathbb{B}_{crys}^{e=1} \to \mathbb{B}_{dR} / \mathbb{B}_{dR}^+ \to 0.
\]

43.3 Rank One Structures

Let \( V \) be a \( p \)-adic Galois representation, then we can form a filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module via
\[
\mathcal{D}_{st}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{st} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^{G_K}, \quad \mathcal{D}_{dR}(V) := \left( \mathbb{B}_{dR} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V \right)^{G_K}.
\]

Following Fontaine, if \( V \) is semi-stable, then \((\mathcal{D}_{st}(V), \mathcal{D}_{dR}(V))\) is weakly admissible. Conversely, for a filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module \( D = (D_0, D) \), we can introduce a Galois representation via the functor
\[
\mathcal{V}_{st}(D) := \left\{ v \in \mathcal{D}_{st} : \varphi v = v, \ N v = 0 \ & 1 \ & v \in Fil^0_{HT}(\mathbb{B}_{dR} \otimes_K D) \right\}.
\]

Moreover, following Colmez-Fontaine, if \((D_0, D)\) is weakly admissible, then \( \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) \) is semi-stable.

While for general ranks, the proof of this equivalence between semi-stable representations and weakly admissible filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module is a bit twisted, the rank one case is rather transparent, thanks to the structural result above on \( \mathbb{B}_{crys}^{e=1} \). As the statement, together with its proof, is a good place to understand the essentials involved, we decide to include full details.

**Proposition.** ([CF]) Let \( D = (D_0, D) \) be a filtered \((\varphi, N)\)-module of dimension 1 over \( K \).

(i) If \( t_H(D) < t_N(D_0) \), \( \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) = \{ 0 \} \);
(ii) If \( t_H(D) = t_N(D_0) \), \( \dim_{\mathbb{Q}_p} \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) = 1 \). If \( \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) \) is generated by \( \alpha \cdot x \), \( \alpha \) is an invertible element of \( \mathbb{B}_{st} \);
(iii) If \( t_H(D) > t_N(D_0) \), \( \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) \) is infinite dimensional over \( \mathbb{Q}_p \).

**Proof.** The core is really the structural result on \( \mathbb{B}_{crys}^{e=1} \) stated in the previous subsection. (In fact, only (i) and (ii) will be used.)

Step One: Twisted by \( \mathbb{Q}(-m) \) to make Hodge-Tate weight zero. Since \( \text{dim}_{\mathcal{O}_K} D_0 = 1 \) and \( N \) is nilpotent, we have \( D_0 = K_0 x \) with \( N x = 0 \). Let \( \varphi(x) = a \cdot x = p^m a_0 \cdot x \) with \( m = v_p(a) = t_N(D) \) and \( a_0 \in K_0 \) satisfying \( v_p(a_0) = 0 \). Then there exists an element \( \alpha_0 \in W(\bar{K}) \) satisfying \( \varphi(\alpha_0) = a_0 \alpha_0 \). Set accordingly \( \alpha = \alpha_0^{-1} \cdot t^m \). Clearly, \( \alpha \) is an invertible element in \( \mathbb{B}_{crys} \).

Step Two: Deduced to Crystalline Periods. If \( \beta x \in \mathcal{V}_{st}(D) \) with \( \beta \neq 0 \), then
\begin{itemize}
  \item [a)] \( 0 = N(\beta x) = N(\beta) x + \beta \cdot N(x) = N(\beta) x \). Hence \( N(\beta) = 0 \);
  \item [b)] \( \beta \in \text{Fil}^{-t_N(D)} \mathcal{B}_{st} \) by definition; And \( \beta x = \varphi(\beta) x = \varphi(\beta) \cdot ax \). So \( \varphi(\beta) = a^{-1} \cdot \beta \).
\end{itemize}

Therefore,
\[
\mathcal{V}_{st}(D) = \left\{ \beta x \middle| \beta \in \text{Fil}^{-t_N(D)} \mathcal{B}_{st}, N(\beta) = 0, \varphi(\beta) = a^{-1} \beta \right\}.
\]
Set then $\beta = y\alpha \in \mathbb{B}_{st}$, (since $\alpha \in \mathbb{B}_{cryst}$ is invertible, this is possible,) and we have

$$\varphi(\beta) = \varphi(y)\varphi(\alpha) = \varphi(y) \cdot \varphi(\alpha_0^{-1}) \cdot \varphi(t^{-m}) = \varphi(y) \cdot \varphi(\alpha_0)^{-1} \cdot p^{-m}t^{-m}$$

since $\varphi(t^{-1}) = (pt)^{-1}$. On the other hand,

$$\varphi(\beta) = a^{-1} \beta = a^{-1} y\alpha = a^{-1} y \cdot \alpha_0^{-1} t^{-m}$$

$$= y \cdot p^{-m} \alpha_0^{-1} t^{-m} = y \cdot \varphi(\alpha_0)^{-1} \cdot p^{-m} t^{-m}.$$  

Consequently, $\varphi(y) = y$. Therefore,

$$\mathbb{V}_{st}(D) = \left\{ y \cdot \alpha x \mid y \in \text{Fil}^{|s(D)-|t(D)|}\mathbb{B}_{st}, N(y) = 0, \varphi(y) = 1 \right\}$$

$$= \left\{ y \cdot \alpha x \mid y \in \text{Fil}^{|s(D)-|t(D)|}\mathbb{B}_{cryst}, \varphi(y) = 1 \right\}$$

$$= \left\{ y \cdot \alpha x \mid y \in \text{Fil}^{|s(D)-|t(D)|}\mathbb{B}_{st}^{y=1} \right\}.$$  

This then completes the proof of the Proposition.

### 44 Filtration of Invariant Lattices

Now let come back to our algebraic approach to the conjectural MRL.

Let then $D_L := (D_0, D)$ be a filtered $(\varphi, N; G_{L/K})$-module. So $D_0$ is defined over $L_0$ and $D$ is over $L$. By the compactness of the Galois groups, there exists a lattice version of $(D_0, D)$ which we denote by $(\Lambda_0, \Lambda)$. In particular, $\Lambda_0$ is an $O_{L_0}$-lattice with a group action $G_{L_0/K_0}$. Consider then the finite covering map

$$\pi_0 : \text{Spec} O_{L_0} \to \text{Spec} O_K.$$  

We identify $\Lambda_0$ with its associated coherent sheaf on $\text{Spec} O_{L_0}$. Set

$$\Lambda_{0,K} := \left( (\pi_0)_* \Lambda_0 \right)^{\text{Gal}(L_0/K_0)}.$$  

Clearly, there is a natural $(\varphi, N)$-structure on $\Lambda_{0,K}$.

Moreover, for the natural covering map

$$\pi : \text{Spec} O_L \to \text{Spec} O_K,$$  

view $\Lambda$ as a coherent sheaf on $\text{Spec} O_L$ and form the coherent sheaf $O_L(-[\deg(\pi) \cdot t]m_L)$, where $t \in \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}$ and $m_L$ denotes the maximal idea of $O_L$. Consequently, it makes sense to talk about

$$\Lambda_K(t) := \left( \pi_*(\Lambda \otimes O_L(-[\deg(\pi) \cdot t]m_L)) \right)^{\text{Gal}(L/K)}.$$  

Or equivalently, in pure algebraic language,

$$\Lambda_K(t) := \left( \Lambda \otimes m_L^{[t,G_{L/K}]} \right)^{\text{Gal}(L/K)}.$$  

99
Even we can read ramification information involved from this decreasing filtration consisting of invariant \( O_K \)-lattices, unfortunately, we have not yet been able to obtain its relation with \( \omega \)-structure wanted.

On the other hand, to go back from filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules to filtered \((\varphi, N; G_{L/K})\)-modules, a solution to the inverse Galois problem for \( p \)-adic number fields is needed. (Alternatively, as pointed by Hida, we can first use an independent geometric approach to be explained below to establish the conjectural MRL and hence the general CFT for \( p \)-adic number fields and then turn back as an application of our CFT to solve the inverse Galois problem for \( p \)-adic number fields.)

45 Tate-Sen Theory and Its Generalizations

From now on, we explain what is involved in our second approach to the conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law. As said, this approach is an arithmetic-geometrical one, with the main aim to characterize \( p \)-adic representations of fundamental groups with finite monodromy around marks of algebraic curves defined over finite fields of characteristic \( p \) in terms of what we call semi-stable parabolic rigid \( F \)-bundles on the logarithmic rigid analytic spaces associated to logarithmic formal schemes whose special fibers are the original marked curves. For this purpose, also for the completeness, we start with some preparations.

45.1 Sen’s Method

Consider then the natural action of \( G_K \) on \( \hat{K} = \mathbb{C} \). For a closed subgroup \( H \) of \( G_K \), clearly, \( \hat{K}^H \subset \mathbb{C}^H \), which implies in particular that \( \hat{K}^\Gamma = \mathbb{C}^\Gamma \). In fact much strong result holds:

Ax-Sen-Tate Theorem. For every closed subgroup \( H \) of \( G_K \), we have \( \hat{K}^H = \mathbb{C}^H \). In particular, \( \hat{K} = \mathbb{C}^\Gamma \).

With this, to understand the action of \( G_K \) on \( \mathbb{C} \), we are led to the study of the residual action of \( \Gamma_K \) on \( \hat{K} \). By using the so-called Tate-Sen decomposition process, this can be reduced to the study of the action of \( \Gamma_K \) on \( K_\infty \), which is known to be given by the cyclotomic character.

Motivated by this, following Sen, for a general \( \mathbb{C} \)-representation of \( G_K \), we first concentrate on its \( H_K \)-invariant part, which offers a natural \( \hat{K}_\infty \)-representation of \( \Gamma_K \); then by the decomposition technique just mentioned, we are led to a \( K_\infty \)-representation of \( \Gamma_K \). \( \Gamma_K \) is a rather simple \( p \)-adic Lie group, namely, abelian of rank 1 over \( \mathbb{Z}_p \). This final residual \( K_\infty \)-representation of \( \Gamma_K \) can be described via its infinitesimal action of \( \text{Lie} \Gamma_K \), which in turn is controlled by a single differential operator (modulo a certain finite extension):

Theorem. (Sen) (1) \( H^1(H_K, GL_d(\hat{\mathbb{C}})) = 1 \);

(2) The natural map \( H^1(\Gamma_K, GL_d(\hat{\mathbb{C}})) \to H^1(\Gamma_K, GL_d(\hat{K}_\infty)) \) induced by the natural inclusion \( K_\infty \to \hat{K}_\infty \) is a bijection;
(3) Denote by $D_{\text{Sen}}(V)$ the union of all $K_\infty$-vector subspaces of $(\mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$ which are $\Gamma_K$-stable and finite dimensional (over $K_\infty$). Then for $\gamma \in \Gamma_K$ close enough to 1, the series operator on $D_{\text{Sen}}(V)$ defined by

$$\Theta := \frac{1}{\log p \chi_{\text{cycl}}(\gamma)} \sum_{n \geq 1} \frac{(1 - \gamma)^n}{n}$$

converges and is independent of the choice of $\gamma$.

Consequently, for a $\mathbb{C}$-representation $V$ of $G_K$ of dimension $d$, we have the following associated structures:

1. The $H_K$-invariants $(\mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$ is a $\hat{K}_\infty$-vector space of dimension $d$;
2. $D_{\text{Sen}}(V)$ is a $K_\infty$-vector space of dimension $d$;

Therefore, the natural map

$$\hat{K}_\infty \otimes_{K_\infty} D_{\text{Sen}}(V) \to (\mathbb{C} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$$

is an isomorphism and we have a natural residual action of $\Gamma_K$ on $D_{\text{Sen}}(V)$.

(3) The action of Lie$(\Gamma_K)$ on $D_{\text{Sen}}(V)$ is given by the operator $\Theta := \frac{\log \gamma}{\log \Gamma_K}$ (where $\gamma \in \Gamma_K$ is chosen to be close enough to 1) defined as above, which is $K_\infty$-linear.

Due to the fact that $\Theta$ is defined only for $\gamma$ close enough to 1, the Lie action is only defined for a certain open subgroup of $\Gamma_K$. This is why in literature quite often we have to shift our discussion from $K$-level to $K_n$-level for a certain $n$.

45.2 Sen’s Theory for $\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$

The above result of Sen is based on the so-called Sen-Tate method. This method has been generalized by Colmez to a much more general context. (See e.g., [Col3], [FO].) This then leads Fontaine to obtain Sen’s theory for $\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}$ and Cherbonnier-Colmez to the theory of overconvergence, both of which play key roles in Berger’s solution to Fontaine’s Monodromy Conjecture for $p$-adic Galois representations.

**Theorem.** (Fontaine) Let $V$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$ of dimension $d$. Then we have the following associated structures:

(i) There is a maximal element $D^+_\text{Fon}(V)$ in the set of finitely generated $\Gamma_K$-stable $\mathbb{K}_\infty[[t]]$-submodules of $(\mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$;

(ii) The $\mathbb{K}_\infty[[t]]$-submodule $D^+_\text{Fon}(V)$ is a free $\mathbb{K}_\infty[[t]]$ of rank $d$ equipped with a natural residual $\Gamma_K$-action whose infinitesimal action via Lie$(\Gamma_K)$ is given by a differential operator $\nabla_V$;

(iii) $V$ is de Rham if and only if $\nabla_V$ has a full set of solutions in $D^+_\text{Fon}(V)$;

(iv) Natural residue map $\theta : \mathbb{B}_{\text{dR}}^+ \to \mathbb{C}$ when applying to $(D^+_\text{Fon}(V), \nabla_V)$ gives rise naturally to $(D_{\text{Sen}}(V), \Theta_V)$.

45.3 Overconvergence

By the work of Fontaine, for a $p$-adic representation $V$ of $G_K$, we can associate it to an etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module $D(V) := (\mathbb{B} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$. While useful, this etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module $D(V)$
is only a first approximation to the Galois representation $V$ since $B$ is too rough. Thus, certain refined structures should be introduced. This leads to the theory of overconvergence.

Let $B_{1/r}$ be the subring of $B$ defined by

$$B_{1/r} := \{ x \in B : x = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} p^k [x_k], x_k \in \overline{E}, \lim_{k \to \infty} \left( k + \frac{p-1}{p} \cdot \frac{1}{r} \cdot v_E(x_k) \right) = +\infty \}. $$

One checks that

$$B^r_B := (B_{1/r})^{H_K} = \left\{ \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} a_k \pi^k_K : a_k \in K_{0,\infty} \cap F^{ur}, \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} a_k X^k \text{ convergent and bounded on } p^{-1/ekr} \leq |X| < 1 \right\} $$

where $e_K$ denotes the ramification index of $K_{0,\infty}/K_{0,\infty}$.

We say that a $p$-adic representation $V$ of $G_K$ is overconvergent if, for some $r > 0$, $D(V) := (B_{1/r} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$ has a basis consisting of elements of $D^r(V) := (B_{1/r} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$. In other words, there exists a basis of $D(V)$ whose corresponding matrix $\text{Mat}(\varphi)$ for the Frobenius $\varphi$ belongs to $M(d, B_{1/r})$ for some $r > 0$.

**Theorem.** (Cherbonnier][Cherbonnier-Clomez) Every $p$-adic representation of $G_K$ is overconvergent.

### 46 $p$-adic Monodromy Theorem

Now we are ready to recall Berger’s proof of Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Representations.

Let $V$ be a $p$-adic Galois representation of $G_K$. Following Fontaine, we obtain an etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module $D(V)$. This, together with the overconvergence of $D(V)$, naturally gives raise to the question whether the differential operator $\nabla(:= \log(\gamma)/\log_e(\chi(\gamma))$ for $\gamma \in \Gamma_K$ close enough to 1, reflecting the Lie action of $\Gamma_K$,) makes sense on the overconvergent subspace $D^r(V) := (B_{1/r} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}_p} V)^{H_K}$. Thus, we need to check how $\nabla$ acts on the periods $B^r_B := \cup_{r>0} B^r_{1/r}$. Unfortunately, $B^r_B$ is not $\nabla$-closed: Easily one finds that

$$\nabla(f(\pi)) = \log(1 + \pi) \cdot (1 + \pi) \cdot df/d\pi.$$

In particular, with the appearence of the factor $\log(1 + \pi)$, boundness condition for the elements involved in the definition of $B^r_B$ becomes clearly too restricted and hence should be removed. To remedy this, we make the following extension of periods (from $B^r_B$ to

$$B^r_{1/r} := \left\{ f(\pi_K) = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} a_k \pi^k_K : a_k \in \text{Fr} \ W(k_{0,\infty}) \right\}$$

& $f(X)$ convergent on $p^{-1/ekr} \leq |X| < 1$ \right\} $$

102
to include \( \log(1 + \pi) \). In fact, much more has been achieved, namely, we now have a natural geometric interpretation for the periods: The union \( \bigcup_{r=0}^{\infty} \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^r =: \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \) is exactly the so-called Robba ring used in the theory of \( p \)-adic differential equations. Consequently, \( \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \) is the subring of \( \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \) consisting of those functions which are bounded; and \( \nabla \) naturally acts on the periods

\[
\mathcal{D}_{\text{rig}}^\dagger(V) := \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_k} \mathcal{D}(V).
\]

For general \( p \)-adic representations \( V \), the differential operators \( \nabla \) do not behave nicely. However, for de Rham representations, the situation changes dramatically:

**Theorem.** (Berger) Let \( V \) be a \( p \)-adic Galois representation of dimension \( d \). Then

1. \( V \) is de Rham if and only if there exists a free \( \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \)-submodule \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) \) of rank \( d \) of \( \mathcal{D}_{\text{rig}}^\dagger(V)[\frac{1}{\tau}] \) which is stable under the differential operator \( \nabla := \frac{1}{\log(1 + \pi)} \cdot \nabla \) and the Frobenius operator \( \varphi \) such that \( \varphi^r \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) = \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) \); 
2. \( V \) is semi-stable if and only if \( (\mathbb{B}_{\log,K}^\dagger[\frac{1}{\tau}] \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_k} \mathcal{D}(V))^\dagger \) is a \( K_0 \)-vector space of dimension \( d \), where, as usual, \( \mathbb{B}_{\log,K}^\dagger := \mathbb{B}_{\log,K}^\dagger[\log(\pi)] \); and 
3. \( V \) is crystalline if and only if \( (\mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger[\frac{1}{\tau}] \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_k} \mathcal{D}(V))^\dagger \) is a \( K_0 \)-vector space of dimension \( d \).

In fact, (ii) and (iii) may be obtained by using Sen’s method, that is, the so-called regularization and decompletion processes.

**Examples.** (1) When \( V \) is crystalline, we have \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) = \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \otimes_F \mathcal{D}_{\text{crys}}(V) \), a result essentially due to Wach [Wa1,2];
(2) When \( V \) is semi-stable, we have \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) = \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \otimes_F \mathcal{D}_{\text{st}}(V) \).

Berger-Wach modules \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) \) above are examples of the so-called \( p \)-adic differential equation with Frobenius structure. In this language, Berger’s theorem claims that \( V \) is de Rham if and only if there exists a \( p \)-adic differential equation \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) \subset \mathcal{D}_{\text{rig}}^\dagger(V)[\frac{1}{\tau}] \) with Frobenius structure.

**Remark.** We say that a \( p \)-adic differential equation is a free module \( M \) of finite rank over the Robba ring \( \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},K}^\dagger \) equipped with a connection \( \partial_M : M \to M \); \( M \) is equipped with a Frobenius structure if there is a semi-linear Frobenius \( \varphi_M : M \to M \) which commutes with \( \partial_M \); and \( M \) is called quasi-unipotent if there exists a finite extension \( L/K \) such that \( \partial_M \) has a full set of horizontal solutions in \( \mathbb{B}_{\text{rig},L}^\dagger[\log(\pi)] \otimes_{\mathbb{B}_K^\dagger} M \).

With all this, then we are in a position to recall the following fundamental result on \( p \)-adic differential equations.

**\( p \)-adic Monodromy Thm.** (Crew, Tsuzuki, Andre, Kedlaya, Mebkhout) *Every \( p \)-adic differential equation with a Frobenius structure is quasi-unipotent.*

Consequently, if \( V \) is a de Rham representation of dimension \( d \), then following Berger, we obtain a \( p \)-adic differential equation \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V) \) equipped with a Frobenius structure. Thus there exists a finite extension \( L/K \) such that \( \mathbb{N}_{\text{BW}}(V)^{G_L} \) is a \( K_0 \)-vector space of dimension \( d \). Therefore, by Theorem (ii), \( V \) is a semi-stable representation of \( G_L \). In other words, \( V \) itself is a potentially semi-stable
representation of $G_K$. This is nothing but the statement of Fontaine\|Berger’s Monodromy Theorem for $p$-adic Galois Representations.

47 Infinitesimal, Local and Global

In this section, we briefly recall how micro arithmetic objects of Galois representations are naturally related with global geometric objects of the so-called overconvergent $F$-isocrystals.

47.1 From Arithmetic to Geometry

The shift from arithmetic to geometry, as said, is carried out via Fontaine-Winterberger’s fields of norms.

Let $K$ be a $p$-adic number field with $\overline{K}$ a fixed algebraic closure and $K_\infty = \bigcup_n K_n$ with $K_n := K(\mu_{p^n})$ the cyclotomic extension of $K$ by adding $p^n$-th root of unity. Denote by $k$ its residue field, and $K_0 := Fr W(k)$ the maximal unramified extension of $\mathbb{Q}_p$ contained in $K$. Set $e := (e^{(n)})$ with $e^{(n)} \in \mu_{p^n}$ satisfying $e^{(1)} \neq 1$, $(e^{(n+1)})^p = e^{(n)}$, and introduce the base field $E_{K_0} := k((e - 1))$. Then, from the theory of fields of norms, associated to $K$, there exists a finite extension $E_K$ of $E_{K_0}$ in a fixed separable closure $E_{K_0}^{sep}$ such that we have a canonical isomorphism

$$H_K := \text{Gal}(\overline{K}/K_\infty) \cong \text{Gal}(E_{K_0}^{sep}/E_K),$$

where $E_{K_0}^{sep} := \bigcup_{L/K_0, \text{finite Galois}} E_L$ is a separable closure of $E_K$. In this way, the arithmetically defined Galois group $H_K$ for $p$-adic field $K_\infty$ is transformed into the geometrically defined Galois group $\text{Gal}(E_{K_0}^{sep}/E_K)$ for the field $E_K$ of power series defined over finite field.

47.2 From Infinitesimal to Global

Let $\rho : G_K \to GL(V)$ be a $p$-adic representation of $G_K$. Then, following Fontaine, we obtain an etale $(\varphi, \Gamma)$-module $D(V)$. Moreover, by a result of Cherbonnier-Colmez [CC], $D(V)$ is an overconvergent representation. Note that now $\Gamma_K$, being the Galois group of $K_\infty/K$, is abelian and may be viewed as an open subgroup of $\mathbb{Z}_p^*$ via cyclotomic character. This, following Sen, leads naturally to a certain connection. In this way, we are able to transform our initial arithmetic objects of Galois representations into the corresponding structures in geometry, namely, that of $p$-adic differential equations with Frobenius structure, following Berger [B1]. However, despite of this successful transformation, we now face a new challenge – In general, the $p$-adic differential equations obtained have singularities. This finally leads to the category of de Rham representations: thanks to the works of Fontaine and Berger, for de Rham representations, there are only removable singularities.

On the other hand, contrary to this infinitesimal theory, thanks to the works of Levelt and Katz ([Le], [Ka2]), we are led to a corresponding global theory, the framework of which was first built up by Crew ([Cre]) based on Berthelot’s overconvergent
isocrystals ([B2], [BO1,2], [O]). For more details, see the discussion below. Simply put, the up-shot is the follows: If \( X^0 \hookrightarrow X \) is a marked regular algebraic curve defined over \( \mathbb{F}_q \), then, Crew (for rank one) ([Cre]) and Tsuzuki (in general) ([Ts1]) show that there exists a canonical one-to-one correspondence between \( p \)-adic representations of \( \pi_1(X^0, \ast) \) with finite monodromy along \( Z = X \setminus X^0 \) and the so-called unit-root \( F \)-isocrystals on \( X^0 \) overconvergent around \( Z \). This result is an arithmetic-geometric analogue of the result of Weil recalled in Part A on correspondence between complex representations of fundamental groups and flat bundles over compact Riemann surfaces, at least when \( Z \) is trivial.

Conversely, to go from global overconvergent isocrystals to micro \( p \)-adic Galois representations, aiming at establishing the conjectural MRL relating de Rham representations to semi-stable filtered \((\varphi, N; \omega)\)-modules, additional works should be done. We suggest the reader to go to the papers [Ber3], [Tsu2] and [Mar].

### 48 Convergent \( F \)-isocrystals and Rigid Stable \( F \)-Bundles

Recall that the \( p \)-adic Monodromy Theorem is built up on Crew and Tsuzuki’s works on overconvergent unit-root \( F \)-isocrystals. To understand it, in this section, we make some preparations following [Cre]. Along with this same line, we also offer a notion called semi-stable rigid \( F \)-bundles of slope zero in rigid analytic geometry, which is the key to our algebraic characterization of \( p \)-adic representations of fundamental groups of complete, regular, geometrically irreducible curves defined over finite fields.

#### 48.1 Rigid Analytic Spaces

Let \( R \) be a complete DVR of characteristic zero with perfect residue field \( k \) of characteristic \( p \) and fraction field \( K \). Let \( \mathfrak{X}/R \) be a flat \( p \)-adic formal \( R \)-scheme with closed fiber \( X = \mathfrak{X} \otimes k \) and generic fiber the rigid analytic space \( \mathfrak{X}^\text{an}/K \). Following Raynaud, the points of \( \mathfrak{X}^\text{an} \) then are naturally in bijection corresponding to the set of closed subschemes of \( \mathfrak{X} \) which are integral, finite and flat over \( R \). Therefore, we have the so-called specialization map \( \text{sp} : \mathfrak{X}^\text{an} \to X \) sending a point of \( \mathfrak{X}^\text{an} \), viewed as a subscheme \( Z \subset \mathfrak{X} \), to its support \( Z \otimes k \), which is a closed point of \( X \). Define, for any subscheme of \( X \) (or of \( \mathfrak{X} \)), its tube \( \mathfrak{X}[Z] := \text{sp}^{-1}(Z) \). One can easily check that

(i) if \( Z \subset X \) is open then \( \mathfrak{X}[Z] = Z^\text{an} \) where \( Z \) is a flat lifting of \( Z \) over \( R \). In particular, \( \mathfrak{X}[X] = \mathfrak{X}^\text{an} \);

(ii) if \( Z \subset X \) is closed, say, defined by \( f_1, \ldots, f_n \in \Gamma(O_X) \), then

\[
\mathfrak{X}(Z) = \{ x \in \mathfrak{X}^\text{an} : |f_i(x)| < 1 \, \forall i \}.
\]

#### 48.2 Convergent \( F \)-Isocrystals

Let \( X/k \) be a separated \( k \)-scheme of finite type, and \( X \hookrightarrow \mathfrak{Y} \) a closed immersion into a flat \( p \)-adic formal \( R \)-scheme that is formally smooth in a neighborhood of \( X \). Then the diagonal embedding gives us two natural projections \( p_1, p_2 : \mathfrak{X}[\mathfrak{Y}] \to \mathfrak{X}[\mathfrak{Y}]X[\mathfrak{Y}] \). Following
Berthelot ([B2]), a convergent isocrystal on \((X/K, \mathcal{Y})\) is a locally free sheaf \(E\) of \(\mathcal{O}_{X/K}\)-modules endowed with an isomorphism

\[
p_1^*E \cong p_2^*E
\]

restricting to the identity on the image of the diagonal and satisfying the usual compatibility conditions (for more involved copies). A morphism of convergent isocrystals on \((X/K, \mathcal{Y})\) is just a morphism of locally free sheaves compatible with \((*)\).

**Theorem.** (Berthelot) The category of convergent isocrystals on \((X/K, \mathcal{Y})\) is

(i) independent, up to canonical equivalence, of the choice of \(X \hookrightarrow \mathcal{Y}\);
(ii) functorial in \(X/K\); and
(iii) of local nature on \(X\).

Consequently, since every separated \(X/k\) of finite type always admits such embeddings locally on \(X\), we obtain the category of convergent isocrystals on a general \(X/k\) by gluing.

### 48.3 Integrable and Convergent Connections

Let \(E\) be a locally free \(\mathcal{O}_X\)-sheaf. Then an integrable connection \(\nabla : E \to E \otimes \Omega^1_X\) on \(E\) may be obtained via an isomorphism

\[
q_1^*E \to q_2^*E,
\]

where \(\Delta_1\) is the first infinitesimal neighborhood \(\Delta_1\) of the diagonal \([X \subset X \times X][\), satisfying the usual cocycle conditions (above). Motivated by this, an integrable connection \(\nabla\) on \(E\) is called convergent if the associated isomorphism above can be extended to \((*)\), i.e., from the first infinitesimal neighborhood to all levels of infinitesimal neighborhoods.

### 48.4 Frobenius Structure

Now assume that \(k \supset \mathbb{F}_q\) and let \(F = F_q\) be a fixed power of the absolute Frobenius of \(k\). Choose once and for all a homomorphism \(\sigma : K \to K\) extending the \(p\)-adic lifting of \(F_q\) on \(W(k)\) and fixing a uniformizer \(\pi\) of \(R\). Then by the functorial property of categories of convergent isocrystals, the pair \((F_q, \sigma)\) gives rise to a semi-linear functor \(F^\sigma\). An \(F\)-isocrystal on \(X/K\) is defined to be a convergent isocrystal \(E\) equipped with an isomorphism

\[
\Phi : F^\sigma_*E \to E.
\]

We can see that if \(\nabla\) is the integral connection with \(\nabla(s) =: \sum s_i \otimes \eta_i\), \(\eta_i \in \Omega^1_{X/k}\), then

\[
\nabla(\Phi(s)) = \sum_i \Phi(s_i) \otimes \sigma^*\eta_i.
\]
48.5 Unit-Root $F$-Isocrystals

In the case when $X = \text{Spec}(k)$, an $F$-isocrystal on $X/K$ is simply a finite-dimensional $K$-vector space endowed with a $\sigma$-linear automorphism $\Phi : \sigma^*V \cong V$. Since we assume that $\sigma(\pi) = \pi$, following Dieudonné (see e.g., [Man], [Dem]), there is a natural decomposition of $F$-isocrystals $V = \oplus_i V_i$ indexed by a finite set of $l \in \mathbb{Q}$, where, if $l = a/b$ with $a, b \in \mathbb{Z}, (a, b) = 1$ and $b > 0$, $V_i \otimes W(k)$ is simply a $\pi^a$-eigenspace of $\Phi^b$. We call the number $\dim_{\mathbb{Q}}$ the Dieudonné slope of $\Phi$ in $V$. If all slopes are the same, $V$ is pure; moreover, $V$ is called a unit-root isocrystal, if it is pure of slope zero.

More generally, if $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi)$ is an $F$-isocrystal on $X/R$, then for any point $x \to X$ with values in a perfect field, there exists a formal covering $\text{Spf}(R') \to \text{Spf}(R)$ for $\text{Spf}W(k(x)) \to \text{Spf}(W(k))$. Denote by $\sigma' : R' \to R'$ a compatible lift of $F$. Then the pull-back of $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi)$ to $x/R'$ is an $F$-isocrystal on $x/R'$, the so-called fiber of $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi)$ at $x$. We say that an $F$-isocrystal $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi)$ is called unit-root if all its fibers are.

**Theorem.** (Crew) Let $X/k$ be a smooth $k$-scheme and suppose that $\mathbb{F}_q \subset k$. Then there exists a natural equivalence of categories

$$\mathcal{G} : \mathcal{R}\text{ep}_k(\pi_1(X)) \cong \text{Isoc}^{F\text{ur}}(X/K)$$

where $\mathcal{R}\text{ep}_k(\pi_1(X))$ denotes the category of $K$-representations of the fundamental group $\pi_1(X)$ of $X$, and $\text{Isoc}^{F\text{ur}}(X/K)$ denotes the category of unit-root $F$-isocrystals on $X/K$.

This result is based on Katz’s work on the correspondence between $R$-representations of $\pi_1(X)$ and the so-called unit-root $F$-lattices on $\mathcal{X}/R$ ([Ka1]). Here, as usual, by an $F$-lattice on $\mathcal{X}/(\mathcal{R}, \phi)$, we mean a locally free $R \otimes O_{\mathcal{X}}$-modules $\mathcal{E}$ equipped with a map $\Phi : \phi^*\mathcal{E} \to \mathcal{E}$ such that $\Phi \otimes \mathbb{Q}$ is an isomorphism ($\phi : \mathcal{X} \to \mathcal{X}$ a lifting of the absolute Frobenius of $X$).

The key to Crew’s proof is the following Langton type result:

**Lemma.** ([Cre]) Let $X/k$ be a smooth affine $k$-scheme and $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi)$ be a unit-root $F$-isocrystal on $X/K$. Then there is a unit-root $F$-lattice $(\mathcal{E}, \Pi)$ on $\mathcal{X}/R$ such that $(\mathcal{E}, \Phi) = (\mathcal{E}, \Pi)^{\text{un}}$.

48.6 Stability of Rigid $F$-Bundles

The above result of Crew may be viewed as an arithmetic analogue of Weil’s result on the correspondence between representations of fundamental groups and flat bundles over compact Riemann surfaces. However now the context is changed to curves defined over finite fields of characteristic $p$, the representations are $p$-adic, and, accordingly the flat bundles are replaced by unit-root $F$-isocrystals. In fact, the arithmetic result is a bit more refined: since the associated fundamental group is pro-finite, the actual analogue in geometry is better to be understood as the one for unitary representations and unitary flat bundles.

With this picture in mind, it is then very naturally to ask whether an arithmetic structure in parallel with Narasimhan-Seshadri correspondence between unitary representations and semi-stable bundles of slope zero can be established in the current setting. This is our next topic.
With the same notation as above, assume in addition that $X$ is completed. Then it makes sense to talk about locally free $F$-sheaves $E$ of $O_{X|\mathbb{Y}}$-modules. If $X = \text{Spec}(k)$, then $E$ is nothing but a finite-dimensional $K$-vector space $V$ endowed with a $\sigma$ automorphism $\Phi: \sigma^*V \cong V$. Similarly, we have its associated Dieudonné slope. Consequently, for general $X$, if $E$ is a locally free $F$-sheaves $E$ of $O_{X|\mathbb{Y}}$-modules, then we can talk above its fibers at points of $X$ with values in a perfect field. We say that a locally free $F$-sheaf $E$ of $O_{X|\mathbb{Y}}$-modules is of slope $s \in \mathbb{Q}$, denoted by $\mu(E) = s$, if all its fibers have slope $s$; and $E$ is called semi-stable if for all saturated $F$-submodules $E'$, we have all slopes of the fibers of $E'$ is at most $\mu(E)$. As usual, if the slopes satisfy the strict inequalities, then we call $E$ stable. For simplicity, we call such locally free objects semi-stable (resp. stable) rigid $F$-bundles on $X/K$ of slope $s$.

**Conjectural MRL in Rigid Analytic Geometry.** Let $X$ be a regular projective curve defined over $k$. There is a natural one-to-one correspondence between absolutely irreducible $K$-representations of $\pi_1(X)$ and stable rigid $F$-bundles on $X/K$ of slope zero.

**Remark.** It is better to rename the above as a Working Hypothesis: There are certain points here which have not yet been completed understood due to lack of time. (For example, in terms of intersection, the so-called Hodge polygon is better than Newton polygon adopted here. ...) See however [Ked1, 2].

### 49 Overconvergent $F$-Isocrystals, Log Geometry and Stability

#### 49.1 Overconvergent Isocrystals

Suppose that $j : X \hookrightarrow \bar{X}$ is an open immersion, $\bar{X} \hookrightarrow \mathbb{Y}$ is a closed immersion with $\mathbb{Y}/\mathcal{R}$ smooth in a neighborhood of $X$ and let $Z := \bar{X} - X$. If $Z$ is locally defined by $f_1, \ldots, f_n \in \Gamma(O_{\mathbb{Y}})$, set, for $\lambda < 1$,

$$Z_\lambda := \{ x \in \bar{X} : |f_i(x)| < \lambda \forall i \}, \quad X_\lambda := \bar{X} - Z_\lambda,$$

and let $j_\lambda : X_\lambda \hookrightarrow \bar{X}$ be the natural inclusion. It is well-known that the pro-object $(X_\lambda)_{\lambda \rightarrow 1}$ does not depend on the choice of $f_i$. So, for any coherent sheaf $E$ on $\bar{X}$, it makes sense to talk about $j_!E := \lim_{\rightarrow} (j_{\lambda})_* j_{\lambda}^* E$. For example, the sheaf $j_!O_{\bar{X}} \subset O_{\bar{X}}$ is the ring of germs of functions on $\bar{X}$ extending into the tube $Z$. Denote by $p_1^*, p_2^*$ the two functors from the category of $j_!O_{\bar{X}}$-modules to the category of $j_!O_{\bar{X}}$-modules. An overconvergent isocrystal $E$ on $(X/K, \mathbb{Y}, Z)$ is defined to be a locally free sheaf of $j_!O_{\bar{X}}$-module $E$ endowed with an isomorphism $p_1^*E \cong p_2^*E$ satisfying the standard cocyle conditions.

**Theorem.** (Berthelot) The category of overconvergent isocrystals on $(X/K, \mathbb{Y}, Z)$ is (i) independent of $\mathbb{Y}$, up to canonical equivalence; (ii) of local nature on $\bar{X}$; and (iii) functorial in the pair $(X \subset \bar{X})$.

Consequently, we define a category of overconvergent isocrystals on $(X/K, Z)$ for any $X \subset \bar{X}$ with $\bar{X}/k$ separated of finite type by glueing. In fact, much stronger result
Theorem. (Berthelot) If $X/k$ is separated and of finite type and $X \subset \bar{X}$ is a compactification of $X$, then the category of overconvergent isocrystals on $(X/K, \bar{X})$ (i) depends, up to canonical equivalence, on $X/K$ only; (ii) is of local nature on $X$; and (iii) is functorial in $X/K$.

Due to this, we often call it the category of overconvergent isocrystals on $X/K$ simply.

Similarly, an overconvergent $F$-isocrystal on $X/K$ is defined to be an overconvergent isocrystal $E$ equipped with an isomorphism $\Phi : F^* \sigma E \cong E$. Denote by $\text{OIsoc}^{Fr,ur}(X/K)$ the category of unit-root overconvergent $F$-isocrystals on $X/K$.

49.2 $p$-adic Reps with Finite Local Monodromy

From now on assume that $X/k$ is a regular geometrically connected curve with regular compactification $\bar{X}$. Let $Z := \bar{X} - X$. We say that a $p$-adic representation $\rho : \pi_1(X) \to \text{GL}(V)$ is having finite (local) monodromy around $Z$ if for each $x \in Z$, the image under $\rho$ of the inertia group at $x$ is finite. Denote by $\text{Rep}_K(\pi_1(X))^\text{fin}$ the associated Tannakian category.

Theorem. (Crew∥Crew for rank one, Tsuzuki in general) The restriction of the Crew equivalence $\mathbb{G}$ induces a natural equivalence

$$\mathbb{G}^! : \text{Rep}_K(\pi_1(X))^\text{fin} \to \text{OIsoc}^{Fr,ur}(X/K).$$

More generally, instead of unit-root condition, there is a notion of quasi-unipotency. In this language, then the $p$-adic Monodromy Theorem is nothing but the following

$p$-adic Monodromy Theorem. (Crew, Tsuzuki∥Crew, Tsuzuki, Andre, Kedlaya, Mebkhout) Every overconvergent $F$-isocrystal is quasi-unipotent.

In addition, quasi-unipotent overconvergent $F$-isocrystal has been beautifully classified by Matsuda ([Mat]). Simply put, we now have the following structural

Theorem. (Crew, Tsuzuki, MA(C)K, Matsuda) Every overconvergent $F$-isocrystal is Matsudian, i.e., admits a natural decomposition to the so-called Matsuda blocks defined by tensor products of étale and unipotent objects.

In a certain sense, while unit-root objects are coming from representations of fundamental groups, quasi-unipotent objects are related with representations of central extension of fundamental groups. Finally, we would like to recall that overconvergent isocrystals have been used by Shiho to define crystalline fundamental groups for high dimensional varieties ([Sh1,2]).

49.3 Logarithmic Rigid Analytic Geometry

The above result of Crew & Tsuzuki is built up from the open part $X$ of $\bar{X}$, a kind of arithmetic analogue of local constant systems over $\mathbb{C}$. As we have already seen, in Part A, to have a complete theory, it is even better if such a theory can be studied over the whole $\bar{X}$: After all, for representation side, $\text{Rep}_K(\pi_1(X))^\text{fin}$ is nothing but $\text{Rep}_K(\pi_1(X))^Z$. 

109
that is, $p$-adic representations of $\pi_1(X)$ with finite local monodromy around every mark $P \in Z$. For doing so, we propose two different approaches, namely, analytic one and algebraic one.

Let us start with the analytic approach. As said, the analytic condition of unit-root $F$-isocrystals on $X$ overconvergent around $Z$ is defined over (infinitesimal neighborhood of) $X$. We need to extend it to the total space $\tilde{X}$. As usual, this can be done if we are willing to pay the price, i.e., allowing singularities along the boundary. Certainly, in general term, singularities are very hard to deal with. However, with our experience over $C$, particularly, the work of Deligne on local constant systems ([De1]), for the case at hands, fortunately, we can expect that singularities involved are very mild – There are only logarithmic singularities appeared. This leads to the notion of logarithmic convergent $F$-isocrystals $E$ over $(\tilde{X}, Z)$. Simply put, it is an overconvergent $F$-isocrystal that can be extended and hence realized as a locally free sheaf of $O_{\tilde{X}}$-module $E$, endowed with an integral connection $\nabla$ with logarithmic singularities along $Z$

$$\nabla : E \to E \otimes \Omega^1_{\tilde{X}}(\log Z),$$

not only defined over the first infinitesimal neighborhood but over all levels of infinitesimal neighborhoods.

Let us next turn to algebraic approach. With the notion of semi-stable rigid $F$-bundles introduced previously, it is not too difficult to introduce the notion of what should be called semi-stable parabolic rigid $F$-bundles.

Even we understand that additional work has to be done here using what should be called logarithmic formal, rigid analytic geometry, but with current level of understanding of mathematics involved, we decide to leave the details to the ambitious reader. Nevertheless, we would like to single out the following

**Correspondence I.** There is a natural one-to-one correspondence between unit-root $F$-isocrystals on $X$ overconvergent around $Z := \tilde{X} - X$ and what should be called unit-root logarithmic overconvergent $F$-isocrystals on $(X, Z)/K$.

**Correspondence II.** There is a natural one-to-one correspondence between unit-root $F$-isocrystals on $X$ overconvergent around $Z := \tilde{X} - X$ and what should be called poly-semi-stable parabolic rigid $F$-bundles of slope zero on $(\tilde{X}^{an}, Z^{an})$. Here $(\tilde{X}, Z)$ denotes a logarithmic formal scheme associated to $(X, Z)$.

Moreover, by comparing the theory to be developed here with that for $\pi$-bundles of algebraic geometry for Riemann surfaces recalled in Part A, for a fixed finite Galois covering $\pi : Y \to X$ ramified at $Z$, branched at $W := \pi^{-1}(Z)$, it is also natural for us to expect the following

**Correspondence III.** There is a natural one-to-one correspondence between orbifold rigid $F$-bundles on $(Y^{an}, W^{an})$ and rigid parabolic $F$-bundles on $(\tilde{X}^{an}, Z^{an})$ satisfying the following compatibility conditions:

(i) it induces a natural correspondences among saturated sub-objects;
(ii) it scales the slopes by a constant multiple $\deg(\pi)$. 

110
Assuming all this, then we can obtain the following

**Micro Reciprocity Law in Log Rigid Analytic Geometry.** There is a natural one-to-one and onto correspondence

\[
\begin{align*}
\{ \text{irreducible } p\text{-adic representations of } \pi_1(X, *) \} \\
\text{with finite monodromy along } Z := \bar{X} \setminus X \\
\end{align*}
\]

\(\cong\)

\[
\{ \text{stable parabolic rigid } F\text{-bundles of slope 0 on } (X^\text{an}, Z^\text{an}) \}.
\]
References

[An1] Y. Andre, Filtrations de Hasse-Arf et monodromie $p$-adique, Invent. Math. 148 (2002), 285-317

[An2] Y. Andre, Slope filtrations, preprint, ENS, 2008

[Ar1] J. Arthur, Eisenstein series and the trace formula, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., AMS 33 (1979) 253-274

[Ar2] J. Arthur, A trace formula for reductive groups. I. Terms associated to classes in $G(\mathbb{Q})$. Duke Math. J. 45 (1978), no. 4, 911–952

[Ar3] J. Arthur, A trace formula for reductive groups. II. Applications of a truncation operator. Compositio Math. 40 (1980), no. 1, 87–121.

[Ar4] J. Arthur, A measure on the unipotent variety, Canad. J. Math 37, (1985) pp. 1237–1274

[B1] L. Berger, Representation $p$-adiques et equations differentielles, Invent. Math. 148 (2002), 219-284

[B2] L. Berger, An introduction to the theory of $p$-adic representations, in Geometric Aspects of Dwork Theory, Walter de Gruyter, (2004) 255–292

[Ber3] L. Berger, Equations differentielles $p$-adiques et $(\varphi, N)$-modules filtres, Asterisque 319 (2008), 13–38.

[Ber1] P. Berthelot, Cohomologie Cristalline des Schemas de Caracteristique $p > 0$, LNM 407, Springer, 1974

[Ber2] P. Berthelot, Cohomologie rigide et cohomologie rigide a supports propres, Preprint 93-03 de Rennes (1996)

[BO1] P. Berthelot & A. Ogus, Notes on crystalline cohomology, Princeton Univ Press, Princeton, 1978

[BO2] P. Berthelot & A. Ogus, $F$-isocrystals and de Rham cohomology I, Inv. Math, 72 (1983), 159-199

[Bis] I. Biswas, Parabolic bundles as orbifold bundles, Duke Math. J 88 (1997), 305-325

[BK1] S. Bloch & K. Kato, $p$-adic etale cohomology, Publ. Math. IHES 63 (1986), 107-152

[BK2] S. Bloch & K. Kato, $L$-functions and Tamagawa numbers of motives, The Grothendieck Festschrift vol I, Birkhäuser, 1991, 222-400

[Bor] A. Borisov, Convolution structures and arithmetic cohomology, Compositio Math. 136 (2003), no. 3, 237–254
[Ch] H. Chen, Harder-Narasimhan categories, preprint, Ecole Polytechnique, 2007

[CC] F. Cherbonnier, & P. Colmez, Representations $p$-adiques surconvergentes, Invent. Math. 133 (1998), 581-611

[CM1] G. Christol & Z. Menkhout, Sur le théorème de l’indice des équations différentielles, I. Ann. Inst. Fourier 43 (1993), 1545-1574

[CM2] G. Christol & Z. Menkhout, Sur le théorème de l’indice des équations différentielles, II. Ann. Math. 146 (1997), 345-410

[CM3] G. Christol & Z. Menkhout, Sur le théorème de l’indice des équations différentielles, III. Ann Math. 151 (2000) 385-457

[CM4] G. Christol & Z. Menkhout, Sur le théorème de l’indice des équations différentielles IV, Invent. Math. 143 (2001) 629-672

[Col1] P. Colmez, Théorie d’Iwasawa des représentations de de Rham d’un corps local, Ann. Math, 148 (1998), 485-571

[Col2] P. Colmez, Les conjectures de monodromie $p$-adiques, Sem. Bourbaki 2001-02, exp. 897, Asterisque 290 (2003), 53-101

[Col3] P. Colmez, Fontaine’s rings and $p$-adic $L$-functions, Tsinghua lecture notes, 2004

[CF] P. Colmez & J.-M. Fontaine, Construction de représentations $p$-adique semi-stables, Invent. Math. 140 (2000), 1-43

[Cre] R. Crew, $F$-isocrystals and $p$-adic representations, Proc. Symp. Pure Math 46 (1987), 111-138

[dJ] A.J. de Jong, Smoothness, semi-stability and alternations, Publ. Math. IHES 83 (1996), 51-93

[De1] P. Deligne, Equations différentielles à points singuliers réguliers, Lecture Notes in Math., 163, Springer-Verlag 1970

[De2] P. Deligne, La conjecture de Weil. I, Publ Math IHES 43 (1974), 273-307.

[De3] P. Deligne, La conjecture de Weil. II, Publ Math IHES 52 (1980), 137-252.

[DM] P. Deligne & D. Mumford, The irreducibility of the space of curves of given genus, Publ Math IHES, 36 (1969), 75-109

[Dem] M. Demazure, Lectures on $p$-divisible groups, LNM. 302, Springer

[D] B. Diehl, Die analytische Fortsetzung der Eisensteinreihe zur Siegel- schönen Modulgruppe, J. reine angew. Math., 317 (1980) 40-73

[Dw] B. Dwork, On exponents of $p$-adic differential equations, J. Reine Angew. Math. 484 (1997), 85-126

113
[Fa1] G. Faltings, $p$-adic Hodge theory, Journal AMS, 1 (1988), 255-299

[Fa2] G. Faltings, Crystalline cohomology and $p$-adic Galois representations, in Algebraic analysis, geometry and number theory, Johns Hopkins Univ Press, 1989, 25-80

[Fa3] G. Faltings, Mumford-stabilitat in der algebraischen Geometrie, Proceedings ICM (1995) 648-655

[Fa4] G. Faltings, Almost etale extensions, Asterisque 279 (2002), 185–270.

[Fon1] J.-M. Fontaine, Groups $p$-divisibles sur les corps locaux, Asterisque 47-48 (1977)

[Fon2] J.-M. Fontaine, Modules galoisiens, modules filtres et anneaux de Barsotti-Tate, Asterisque 65 (1979), 3-80

[Fon3] J.-M. Fontaine, Sur certains types de representations $p$-adiques du groupe de Galois d’un corps local construction d’un anneau de Barsotti-Tate, Ann. Math, 115 (1982), 529-577

[Fon4] J.-M. Fontaine, Cohomologie de de Rham, cohomologie cristalline et representations $p$-adiques, LNM 1016, Springer, (1983) 86-108

[Fon5] J.-M. Fontaine, Representations $p$-adiques des corps locaux, The Grothendieck Festschrift vol I, Birkhäuser, 1991, 249-309

[Fon6] J.-M. Fontaine, Representations $p$-adiques semi-stables, Asterisque 223 (1994) 113-184

[Fon7] J.-M. Fontaine, Le corps des periodes $p$-adiques, Asterisque 223 (1994), 59-111

[Fon8] J.-M. Fontaine, Arithmetique des representations galoisiennes $p$-adiques, Asterisque 295 (2004)

[FL] J.-M. Fontaine & G. Laffaille, Constructions de representations $p$-adiques, Ann. Sci E. N. S., 15 (1982) 547-608

[FM] J.-M. Fontaine & B. Mazur, Geometric Galois representations, in Elliptic Curves, Modular Forms and Fermat’s Last Theorem, International Press, (1995) 41-78.

[FMe] J.-M. Fontaine & W. Messing, $p$-adic periods and $p$-adic etale cohomology, Contemp. Math. 67 (1987), 179-207

[FO] J.-M. Fontaine & Y. Ouyang, Theory of $p$-adic Galois representations, book in preparation for Springer-Verlag

[FW] J.-M. Fontaine & J.-P. Wintenberger, Le corps des normes de certaines extensions algebriques de corps locaux, C. R. Acad Sci. Paris Ser A-B 288 (1979) 367-370
| Reference | Author(s) | Title and Details |
|-----------|-----------|------------------|
| [GS]      | G. van der Geer & R. Schoof | Effectivity of Arakelov Divisors and the Theta Divisor of a Number Field, Sel. Math., New ser. 6 (2000), 377-398 |
| [GM]      | H. Gillet & W. Messing | Cycle classes and Riemann-Roch for crystalline cohomology, Duke Math. J., 55 (1987), 501-538 |
| [Gr1]     | D.R. Grayson | Reduction theory using semistability. Comment. Math. Helv. 59 (1984), no. 4, 600–634 |
| [Gr2]     | D.R. Grayson | Reduction theory using semistability. II. Comment. Math. Helv. 61 (1986), no. 4, 661–676. |
| [G]       | A. Grothendieck | Sur le memoire de Weil ‘Generalisation des fonctions abeliennes’ Seminaire Bourbaki 141 (1956-57) |
| [HN]      | G. Harder & M.S. Narasimhan | On the cohomology groups of moduli spaces of vector bundles over curves, Math. Ann. 212, (1975) 215-248 |
| [Ha]      | T. Hayashi | Computation of Weng’s rank 2 zeta function over an algebraic number field, J. Number Theory 125 (2007), 473-527 |
| [He]      | L. Herr | Sur la cohomologie galoisienne des corps p-adiques, Bull. Soc. Math. France 126 (1998) 563-600 |
| [Hi]      | H. Hida | Modular Forms and Galois Cohomology, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Math 69, 2000 |
| [Hit]     | N. Hitchin | Flat Connections and Geometric Quantization, Comm. Math. Phys. 131 (1990), 347-380. |
| [Hu]      | J. Humphreys | Introduction to Lie algebras and representations, Springer-Verlag, 1972 |
| [Ho]      | O. Hyodo | On the de Rham-witt complex attached to a semi-stable family, Compositio Math. 75 (1991), 241-250 |
| [HK]      | O. Hyodo & K. Kato | Semi-stable reduction and crystalline cohomology with log-arithmetic poles, Asterisque 223 (1994), 221-268 |
| [Iw]      | K. Iwasawa | Letter to Dieudonné, April 8, 1952, in N.Kurokawa and T. Sunuda: Zeta Functions in Geometry, Advanced Studies in Pure Math. 21 (1992), 445-450 |
| [JLR]     | H. Jacquet, E. Lapid & J. Rogawski | Periods of automorphic forms. J. Amer. Math. Soc. 12 (1999), no. 1, 173–240 |
| [K]       | K. Kato | Semi-stable reduction and $p$-adic etale cohomology, Asterisque 223 (1994), 269-293 |
| [Ka1]     | N. Katz | $p$-adic properties of modular schemes and modular forms, in Modular functions of one variable. III, LNM 350 (1973) 69-190 |
[Ka2] N. Katz, Local-to-global extensions of representations of fundamental groups. Annales de l’institut Fourier, 36 (1986), 69-106

[Ka3] N. Katz, Gauss sums, Kloosterman sums, and monodromy groups, Ann. Math. Study 113 (1987)

[KM] N. Katz & W. Messing, Some consequences of the Riemann hypothesis for varieties over finite fields, Invent. Math. 23 (1974), 73-77

[Ked1] K. Kedlaya, A p-adic local monodromy theorem, Ann. Math. 160 (2004), 93-184

[Ked2] K. Kedlaya, Slope filtration revisited, Docum. Math., 10 (2005) 447-525

[Kem] G. Kempf, Instability in invariant theory, Ann. of Math. 108 (1978), 299-316

[Kh1] C. Khare, Compatible systems of mod p Galois representations, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris Ser. I, Math. 323 (1996), no. 2, 117-120.

[Kh2] C. Khare, Compatible systems of mod p Galois representations and Hecke characters, Math. Res. Lett. 10 (2003), no. 1, 71-83.

[Kh3] C. Khare, Reciprocity law for compatible systems of abelian mod p Galois representations, Canad. J. Math. 57 (2005), no. 6, 1215-1223.

[Ki1] H. Ki, All but finitely many non-trivial zeros of the approximations of the Epstein zeta function are simple and on the critical line. Proc. London Math. Soc. (3) 90 (2005), no. 2, 321–344.

[Ki2] H. Ki, On zeros of Weng’s zeta functions, preprint, 2009

[KW] H.H. Kim & L. Weng, Volume of truncated fundamental domains, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. 135 (2007), 1681-1688

[KW2] H.H. Kim & L. Weng, private communications, 2008

[Ko] Y. Komori, Functional equations for Weng’s zeta functions, preprint, 2009

[Laf] L. Lafforgue, Chitoucas de Drinfeld et conjecture de Ramanujan-Petersson. Asterisque No. 243 (1997)

[LS] J. Lagarias & M. Suzuki, The Riemann Hypothesis for certain integrals of Eisenstein series, Journal of Number Theory, 118(2006) 98-122

[L1] S. Lang, Algebraic Number Theory, Springer-Verlag, 1986

[L2] S. Lang, Fundamentals on Diophantine Geometry, Springer-Verlag, 1983

[L3] S. Lang, Introduction to Arakelov theory, Springer Verlag, 1988

[La1] R. Langlands, On the functional equations satisfied by Eisenstein series, Springer LNM 544, 1976

116
[La2] R. Langlands, the volume of the fundamental domain for some arithmetical subgroups of Chevalley groups, in Algebraic Groups and Discontinuous Subgroups, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math. 9, AMS (1966) pp.143–148

[La3] R. Langlands, Euler products, Yale Math. Monograph, Yale Univ. Press, 1971

[Lan] S.G. Langton, Valuative criteria for families of vector bundles on algebraic varieties, Ann. of Math. 101 (1975) 88-110

[Le] A.H.M. Levelt, Jordan decomposition of a class of singular differential operators, Arkiv for Math., 13 (1975), 1-27

[Man] Yu. I. Manin: The theory of commutative formal groups over Fields of Finite characteristic. Usp. Math. 18 (1963), 3-90; Russ. Math. Surveys 18 (1963), 1-80

[Mat] S. Matsuda, Katz Correspondence for Quasi-Unipotent Overconvergent Isocrystals, Compositio Math, 134 (2002), 1-34

[Mar] A. Marmora, Irregularite et conducteur de Swan $p$-adiques, Docum. Math 9(2004) 413-433

[MY] M. Maruyama & K. Yokogawa, Moduli of parabolic stable sheaves, Math. Ann. 293 (1992), no. 1, 77-99

[MS] V.B. Mehta & C.S. Seshadri, Moduli of vector bundles on curves with parabolic structures. Math. Ann. 248 (1980), no. 3, 205–239.

[Meb] Z. Mebkhout, Analogue $p$-adique du theoreme de Turrittin et le theoreme de la monodromie $p$-adque, Invent. Math. 148 (2002) 319-352

[Me] W. Messing, The crystals associated to Barsotti-Tate groups: with applications to abelian schemes, LNM 264, Springer, 1972

[Mi] H. Minkowski, Geometrie der Zahlen, Leipzig and Berlin, 1896

[Mo] S. Mochizuki, A version of the Grothendieck conjecture for $p$-adic local fields, preprint

[MW] C. Moeglin & J.-L. Waldspurger, Spectral decomposition and Eisenstein series, Cambridge Tracts in Math, 113. Cambridge University Press, 1995

[M] D. Mumford, Geometric Invariant Theory, Springer-Verlag, (1965)

[NS] M.S. Narasimhan & C.S. Seshadri, Stable and unitary vector bundles on a compact Riemann surface. Ann. of Math. (2) 82 1965

[Ne] J. Neukirch, Algebraic Number Theory, Grundlehren der Math. Wissenschaften, Vol. 322, Springer-Verlag, 1999

[N1] W. Niziol, Crystalline conjecture vis $K$-theory, Ann. Sci. E.N.S. 31 (1998), 659-681

117
[N2] W. Niziol, Semistable Conjecture via K-theory, Duke Math. J. 141 (2008), 151-178.

[No] M.V. Nori, On the representations of the fundamental group, Compo. Math. 33 (1976), 29-41

[O] A. Ogus, $F$-isocrystals and de Rham cohomology II: Convergent isocrystals, Duke Math. J. 51 (1984), 765-850

[PR] B. Perrin-Riou, $p$-adic $L$-functions and $p$-adic representations, AMS, 2000

[RR] S. Ramanan & A. Ramanathan, Some remarks on the instability flag. Tohoku Math. J. (2) 36 (1984), no. 2, 269–291.

[RZ] M. Rapoport & T. Zink, Period Spaces for $p$-divisible groups, Ann. Math. Studies 141 (1996)

[Saa] N. Saavedra Rivano, Categories Tannakiennes, Lecture Notes in Math. 265 (1972)

[Sen1] S. Sen, Lie abgebras of Galois groups arising from Hodge-Tate modules, Ann. Math 97 (1973), 150-170

[Sen2] S. Sen, Continuous cohomology and $p$-adic Galois representations, Invent. Math. 62 (1980) 89-116

[Se1] J.-P. Serre, Sur les groupes de Galois attache aux groupes $p$-divisibles, Proceedings of a conference on Local Fields, Drisbergen, Sprin- -ger, 1967, 115-131

[Se2] J.-P. Serre, Abelian $l$-adic representations and elliptic curves, Benjamin, 1968

[Se3] J.-P. Serre, Local Fields, GTM 67 Springer-Verlag, 1979

[S1] C.S. Seshadri, Space of unitary vector bundles on a compact Riemann surface. Ann. of Math. (2) 85 (1967) 253–336.

[S2] C.S. Seshadri, Moduli of $\pi$-vector bundles over an algebraic curve, in Questions on Algebraic Varieties (C.I.M.E., III Ciclo, Varenna, 1969), 139–260

[S3] C. S. Seshadri, Fibres vectoriels sur les courbes algebriques, Asterisque 96, 1982

[Sh1] A. Shiho, Crystalline fundamental groups. I. Isocrystals on log crystalline site and log convergent site, J. Math. Sci. Univ. Tokyo 7 (2000), 509-656.

[Sh2] A. Shiho, Crystalline fundamental groups. II. Log convergent cohomology and rigid cohomology, J. Math. Sci. Univ. Tokyo 9 (2002), 1-163.

[Sie] C. L. Siegel, Lectures on advanced analytic number theory, Tata Institute of Fundamental Research, Bombay, 1961

118
| Reference | Author(s) | Title and Details |
|-----------|-----------|--------------------|
| [St1]     | U. Stuhler | Eine Bemerkung zur Reduktionstheorie quadratischer Formen, Arch. Math. (Basel) 27 (1976), no. 6, 604–610 |
| [St2]     | U. Stuhler | Zur Reduktionstheorie der positiven quadratischen Formen. II, Arch. Math. (Basel) 28 (1977), no. 6, 611–619 |
| [Su1]     | M. Suzuki  | A proof of the Riemann Hypothesis for the Weng zeta function of rank 3 for the rationals, pp.175-200, in Conference on L-Functions, World Sci. 2007 |
| [Su2]     | M. Suzuki  | The Riemann hypothesis for Weng’s zeta function of $Sp(4)$ over $\mathbb{Q}$, J. Number Theory, 129 (2009), 551-567 |
| [SW]      | M. Suzuki & L. Weng | Zeta functions for $G_2$ and their zeros, International Mathematics Research Notices, 2009 (2009), 241-290 |
| [Tan]     | T. Tannaka | Principle of duality, in Japanese, (1951) |
| [Ta1]     | J. Tate    | Fourier analysis in number fields and Hecke’s zeta functions, Thesis, Princeton University, 1950 |
| [Ta2]     | J. Tate    | $p$-divisible groups, Proceedings of a conference on Local Fields, Driberger, Springer, 1967, 158-183 |
| [Ta3]     | J. Tate    | Number Theoretic Background, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math. 33 (1979), 3-26 |
| [Tay]     | R. Taylor  | Galois representations, Ann Math. de Toulouse Ser 6, 13 (2004), 73-119 |
| [To]      | B. Totaro  | Tensor products in $p$-adic Hodge theory, Duke Math. 83 (1996), 79-104 |
| [TUY]     | A. Tsuchiya, K. Ueno, Y. Yamada | Conformal field theory on universal family of stable curves with gauge symmetries, Adv. Stud. in Pure Math. 19 (1989), 459-565 |
| [Tsu]     | T. Tsuji   | $p$-adic etale cohomology and crystalline cohomology in the semi-stable reduction case, Invent. Math 137 (1999) 233-411 |
| [Tsu2]    | T. Tsuji   | Introduction to the theory of Fontaine on $p$-adic Galois representations, in Japanese |
| [Ts1]     | N. Tsuzuki | Finite local monodromy of overconvergent unit-root $F$-isocrystals, Amer. J. Math. 120 (1998) 379-412 |
| [Ts2]     | N. Tsuzuki | The local index and Swan conductor, Compo. Math 111 (1998), 245-288 |
| [US]      | K. Ueno & Y. Shimizu | Theory of Moduli III, Iwanami in Japanese |
[Ve] A.B. Venkov, On the trace formula for $SL(3,\mathbb{Z})$, J Soviet Math., 12 (1979), 384-424

[Wa] N. Wach, Representations $p$-adiques potentiellement cristallines, Bull. Soc. Math. France, 124 (1996), 375-400

[Wa2] N. Wach, Representations cristallines de torsion, Compositio Math 108 (1997), 185-240

[We] A. Weil, Generalisation der fonctions abeliennes, J. Math. Pure et Appl. 17 (1938) 47-87

[We2] A. Weil, Basic Number Theory, Springer-Verlag, 1973

[W-2] L. Weng, Rank Two Non-Abelian Zeta and its Zeros, educational version available at http://xxx.lanl.gov/abs/math.NT/0412009

[W-1] L. Weng, Automorphic Forms, Eisenstein Series and Spectral Decompositions, Arithmetic Geometry and Number Theory, 123-210, World Sci. 2006

[W1] L. Weng, Non-Abelian Class Field Theory for Riemann Surfaces, Appendix to [W3], in Arithmetic Geometry and Number Theory, 391-399, World Sci. 2006

[W2] L. Weng, A geometric approach to $L$-functions, in Conference on $L$-Functions, pp. 219-370, World Sci (2007)

[W3] L. Weng, Geometric Arithmetic: A Program, in Arithmetic Geometry and Number Theory, pp. 211-390, World Sci. (2006)

[W4] L. Weng, Non-abelian zeta function for function fields, Amer. J. Math 127 (2005), 973-1017

[W5] L. Weng, A Rank two zeta and its zeros, J of Ramanujan Math. Soc, 21 (2006), 205-266

[W6] L. Weng, General class field theory, personal notes

★: A Blueprint for Local Fields, 2007

★2: Conjectural Micro Reciprocity Law, 2007

★3: Geometric Arithmetic I: Guidance to Literatures and Thoughts, 2008

o: $l$-adic representation for $p$-adic fields, 2008

[W7] L. Weng, Symmetries and the Riemann Hypothesis, this Volume, Adv. Stud. in Pure Math., Math. Soc. of Japan, 173-223.

[W8] L. Weng, Zetas for $Sp(n)$, J. Number Theory, 129 (2009), 567-579, appendix to M. Suzuki, The Riemann hypothesis for Weng’s zeta function of $Sp(4)$ over $\mathbb{Q}$, J. Number Theory, 129 (2009), 551-567
[Wi] J.-P. Wintenberger, Le corps des normes de certaines extensions infinies de corps locaux, Ann Sci ENS 16 (1983), 59-89

[Z] D. Zagier, The Rankin-Selberg method for automorphic functions which are not of rapid decay. J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo Sect. IA Math. 28(3), 415–437 (1982)